

MEMOIRS OF PAUL DE KOOK

MEMOIRS
OF
PAUL DE KOCK
WRITTEN BY HIMSELF

WITH A PHOTOGRAVURE PORTRAIT
OF THE AUTHOR.



LONDON
LEONARD SMITHERS & CO
5 OLD BOND STREET W
1899



PREFACE

April 8th 1869

For a long time I have been urged to write my *Memoirs* for a long time every day numbers of persons have kept saying to me You who have known so many people and seen so many things why don't you describe the former to us and tell us about the latter? Endowed as you are with the gift of observation, your descriptions and your tales could certainly not fail to be of interest to us

Up to now I have always replied to those who would have me undertake a work from the perusal of which, as they assured me with more or less sincerity, they anticipated deriving considerable pleasure

No I shall not write my *Memoirs* and for these reasons first of all because I have never cared to make my own personality conspicuous in a book and in this respect, the example afforded by Jean Jacques himself in certain passages of his *Confessions* does not tempt me at all and secondly because people and things that I have seen during my life which have appeared to me capable of interesting or amusing the public have already done

service in my novels, so that, in describing the former again, or for a second time speaking about the latter, I should only be repeating myself, and if it be true that the maxim *Bis repetita placent* holds good in love and before a good table, it is still more true that in literature there is nothing so insupportable as those writers who, by dint of constantly draining such and such an idea, or such and such a character, end, after having extracted a white and excellent flour, by obtaining nothing but a mawkish and insipid mixture”

That is how I replied to the publishers, to my *confrères* and to such of my friends as would have me turn my thoughts towards the Past, with intent to enliven the Present, and doubtless I had persisted in my resolution, had it not been for a conversation that I had this very day, on the Boulevard du Temple, with an old and charming author, Benjamin Antier by name, a friend of Béranger’s, a friend of mine as well for many long years

Of what did we talk, Antier and I, as we walked along this Boulevard, which formerly was so gay, so animated, so eminently Parisian, with its everlasting round of theatres, and which is now so sad, so deserted relatively, so provincial-looking, with its barracks and its square—so path-riddled, this square, that each time that one is about to cross it, one involuntarily asks oneself if it wouldn’t be advisable first to make one’s last will and testament? Of what did we talk? Of all that no longer exists

in Paris and of all that we recalled to mind as having loved or admired there. Thus our conversation was long so long that, though started at mid day evening surprised us as we were still at it. Events and men of every description of every kind, for sixty years and more all were passed under review a review which at times would cause a tear to rise in the eye, but the more often would bring a smile to the lip. By inclination, as far as I am concerned, I am but little disposed to sadness and Antier is of the same persuasion he prefers to laugh than to cry.

At length as we were making up our minds to part the author of *La Pauvre Famille* and of *L'Auberge des Adrets*—the antipodes in style—said to me

It does one good doesn't it Paul de Koch to look back over the past? It makes one young again.

'My word!' I replied it is certain that whilst we've been chatting I havn't had a moment's in convenience from the gout in spite of the fact that ever since yesterday, I have been in dread of an attack. My left arm is as stiff and as heavy as a bar of lead.

Well do you know my friend went on Antier, since you find them so effective for your trouble in your place I'd make use of your recollections as a remedy.

Nothing I should like better Whenever you are willing we will continue our conversation.

That is not what I meant Of course I shall be

only too happy, at some other time, to run through the pages of our young days again with you, but what I meant to convey to you was that you, as a remedy for the gout, should write down all that you have just now related to me”

“Good! So you too are going to advise me to write my *Memoirs*!”

“And why not? if, while you are writing them, you forget your pain?”

“My dear friend, I have said somewhere or other and with truth, I think, that if it is true that we find a great charm in recalling the past, we are also often apt to flatter ourselves wrongfully in making this charm pass to the end of a pen, whereas it dwells only at the bottom of our hearts”

“Yes! Yes! I know you! You have never troubled yourself much about Politics, therefore you won’t dwell on that subject in your *Memoirs*, and that’s already half the battle for your book, in an age, when—like Proteus, changing at his fancy his colour and his form—this pretentious fiend, pedantic, tiresome and hollow, which we call Politics, pursues us poor Frenchmen everywhere, and especially us poor Parisians, in the drawing-room, in the shop, in the street, in the theatre, and even in the servant’s hall As for religion, you will leave that alone as well, because, faithful to the rule of conduct you have mapped out for yourself in your novels, you will not see the necessity of ridiculing those who believe in everything, merely for the sake of pleas-

ing those who believe in nothing And vice versa
In short, as you are not likely I feel sure of it, to
fall into the bad methods of certain authors of Me-
moirs, methods which consist in giving the most
fastidious descriptions of details of private life not
uninteresting perhaps for him who recollects them
but, on the other hand, wholly unentertaining for
him who has to listen to them your book will be
lively gay *sans façons* a genuine Paul de Kock
book of the old school and as such every one will
want to read it and everyone will read it

I smiled as I listened to Antier

But its almost a plan for my *Mémoirs* that you
are sketching for me my dear fellow,' I said to him.

Well! well so much the better! he / orted
gayly I am lightening the task for you'

Begin by writing down our conversation by
way of a preface then taking your own time and
as you feel inclined, thrust your recollections on to
paper as soon as you find you have sufficient to
form a volume you will take it to a publisher

By the reception given to this seeler you will be
able to judge whether you should start a second
Good bye!

Antier had left me On my return home I be-
gan by dining for it was six o'clock and I still
have the weal ness, contrary to a certain publisher
of my acquaintance—who purposely forgets to dine
in order to husband his purse—of loving the festal
board and of sitting down to it always with an appe

tite, but, after dinner, leaning on the balcony of my window, that window under which, for well-nigh forty-eight years, I have seen so many faces pass by, faces young and old, pretty and plain,—the plain more numerous than the pretty—I found myself reflecting on the words of my old friend

And the result of my reflections was that I took a pen and a bundle of paper, and on that very same day, the 8th April, 1869, I wrote what goes before, "by way of a Preface," as Antier has said

And now, taking my own time and as I feel inclined, as he also expressed it, I am going to write my *Souvenirs* or *Memoirs*, which I will divide into three periods from 1793 to 1815, that is to say, from the time of my birth, during the First Republic, and up to the end of the First Empire from 1815 up to 1848, during the Restoration, the reigns of Charles X and Louis-Philippe, up to the Republic, second edition · and lastly, from 1848 up to our own time

Under how many different governments have I lived?

Only quite recently, along with my son, I made the calculation, it is curious.

I was born during the reign of the National Convention (1792 to 1795)

Then I lived during the Executive Directory (1795 to 1799)

Then during the Consulary Committee (1799)

The Temporary Consulship (1799 to 1802)

- The Permanent Consulship (1802 to 1804)
The Empire with Napoleon I (1804 to 1814)
A Provisional Government (1814)
Louis XVIII, first Restoration (1814 to 1815)
Napoleon I, the Hundred Days (1815)
A Provisional Government (1815)
Louis XVIII second Restoration (1815 to 1824)
Charles X (1824 to 1830)
Provisional Government General Lieutenancy of
the Kingdom (from 30th July 1830 to 7th August
of the same year)
Louis Philippe I (1830 to 1848)
Provisional Presidency of General Cavaignac
(1848)
Presidency of Louis-Napoleon Bonaparte (1848
to 1852)
Temporary Dictatorship of Louis Napoleon
(1851)
Decennial Presidency of Louis Napoleon (1851
to 1852)
Napoleon III Second Empire (1852 to 1868)
There¹ One-and-twenty Governments¹ to say
nothing of the *pompage* of 15th May 1848 But
one must not be too severe, as this *pompage* was a
government for barely four hours Twenty one gov
ernments and a quarter¹ That's not bad is it for
a simple individual? Without counting that at the
rate things are going now a days I am not at all
convinced that I shall die during the one that exists
for the moment. For for some little time, it has

all the appearance of doing what it can to cede its place to another

But what! I agreed not to talk Politics, and here I am, at the very outset, letting myself be carried away

Forgive me, Reader, that will not happen again, or at the very most, that will happen only when I am forced into it, bitterly forced, as for instance, in the very first page of my *Memoirs*

It is not my fault if the Republic, which professes to be *the government par excellence*, and the indubitable source of happiness and joy for all, allowed me, in my cradle, to receive no more than one single kiss from my father

Because they were waiting to lead him to the scaffold

CONTENTS

PREFACE

v

CHAPTER I

My father John Conrad de Koch — The reasons why I am not a Republican — From Holland to France — A first Marriage — Five Children — Second Marriage — A birth and a death — A banking house in Paris — The Dutch refugees with the army of the North — Durnouriez — Consequences of the battle of Nieuwpoort — The return of my father and mother to Paris — The house at Passy — M Maron Protestant minister — Colonel Saumur — Ana chars Clootz — Hébert — Ronsin — Arrest — John Conrad de Koch before the Revolutionary Tribunal — Superfluous defence — Sentenced — On the scaffold — Sequestration of his goods — Consequences of the sentence of the Revolutionary Tribunal — Text of the inventory drawn up after his death (22 Germinal An II) — My cradle is seized — Citizen Anthony Ravigneau and the jewels and silver plate of a victim — A portrait saved — A visit from Fouquier Tinville — My mother threatened with imprisonment at the Abbaye Prison — She owes her safety to me — The Ninth Thermidor

1

CHAPTER II

The morrow of the 9th Thermidor — If I were a historian — What occurred in my family — My mother's third husband — Head of state and gambler — The Palais Royal — History of the first volume of an old novel — The little old woman — Origin of a vocation — Why I was not sent to school — The venerable M. Bedel — A violin master M Mengal — The tune from the Caliph of Bagdad — A ball on the fifth floor — How the good people of Paris used to amuse themselves in 1810 — The charm of meeting with strangers

21

CHAPTER III

I lose my professor — A child's library — Parisian Theatres between 1802 and 1805 — Napoleon I did not understand Parisian humour — Mademoiselle Montansier — A meeting in 1812 — Paris the animal painter — An episode during the famine — About a marriage which Mlle Montansier was on the point of contracting — Barras — General Bonaparte — The origin of the Théâtre du Palais Royal —

A slight grudge against the First Empire — I wish to see the Emperor at close quarters — Birth of the King of Rome — A new violinist is introduced into the Court of the Tuilleries — My first book — How I became a novelist — 'My Wife's Child' — Clerk to a banker, and in apprenticeship as a Great Man — The first page of a first chapter — Who Zoc was — M Theodore — Writing consoles for all 44

CHAPTER IV

Travels in search of a Publisher — Who M Fages was — A word about Bezon — I tackle Pollet, the bookseller — He said 'Business is bad' — Another disappointment — Excellent M Quoy's terror — What sort of a lunch one got for a louis in 1811 — Les Vendanges de Bourgogne — Dorgigny, an author of the good old days — A prince de la main gauche — How a man of wit died in the old days — The outspokenness of the ancients, the prudishness of modern people — Two years of pleasure and heedlessness — How I behaved at twenty — Consequences of a soirée at the Tivoli — The wife of a naval officer — A night of love and fear — You won't catch me there again — A woman's glance, four years later 67

CHAPTER V

My Wife's Child still — A bank clerk his own publisher — From seven to eight hundred francs to be procured — A mirage — Twenty napoleons destined to the gambling table — Intervention of my stepfather — The Cercle des Etrangers — Money won — Money lost — How my first novel at last saw the light of day — Kind friends — A halting success — Only four dozen copies — Should I write a second novel — A lucky meeting — Crugiez — A stop at the Rocher de Cancale — Should I become a dramatic author? — The Caveau in 1814 — The Chevalier de Piss — Armand Gouffe — Brazier — Eugène Salvette — De Jony — Desaugiers — Theaulon — Béranger — Story of my first song *le Chevalier errant* — A Meeting with Martainville — An improvised play — A roll of blank paper — A literary man's little joke — Corsse, the millionaire director — What Napoleon used to be called in 1814 — Four melodramas in two years — The first performance of Madame de Valnoir — The man who triumphed in spite of himself — Parisians, weathercocks — Villeneuve — "You have come to do the same as I" 94

CHAPTER VI

A pause — My first success — Georgette ou la Nièce du tabellion — Madame de Saint-Phai — The Marais soirées — A garret — How romantic situations arise — Hubert,

the bookseller in the wooden galleries of the Palais Royal — The first money received — Frère Jacques — Mon voisin Raymond — At Ladvocat's house — Chateaubriand — Gu tave ou le mauvais sujet — Peacock shrieks from the Prudes — A duel with a chemist — A love adventure — Goose Turkey or Chicken — How the adventure was fated to end — A gallant who hulks at full speed — Nicolas Barba — A visit to Pigault Lebrun — Ladvocat again — Charles Nodier and Zozo — The bookseller with the iruffles — Hippolyte Souverain, the miller — M Alexandre Dumas fils — Baudry — Lachapelle — Alexandre Cadot — How we dined at his house — Sartorius — A publisher of whom I won't speak

100

CHAPTER VII

One of the happy periods of my life — My work for the Opéra Comique — Une Nuit au Château — Le Philosophe en voyage — Les infidèles — Le Voleur — A proposal from Merle — One of my aversions — What Nestor Ro queplan said to me on this subject — A Journ y to Rosny — A visit to the chateau of the Duchesse de Berry — Meeting the Duchesse — The little apron — How later on two separate occasions I remembered this little apron — The lover of the Opéra Comique — Garat — Hoffmann — The ever youthful M de Saint Georges — Boieldieu — Herold — Florist and composer — Other guests at the soirées in the foyer of the Opera Comique — Perpignan a cen or of the departed school — A way of knowing what is going on in Paris — Story of Piberlo the actor and Mistenflute the painter — The little servant girl — Cuckold beaten and discontented — But philosophic — Perpignan's monomania — I sacrifice my plates — Adolphe Adam — Les Bergers de Syracuse — About tobacco — Destruction of the Théâtre Feydeau — A swan's song — Theatrical managers

169

CHAPTER VIII

I dine at the Hôtel de Ville — Comte de Chabrol — Camille Delavigne — Inception of a gag — There's nothing there yet we must get something put there — The Revolution of 1830 — The gag goes on — M de Salvandy — Alexandre Dumas Gerard de Nerval etc etc — Dupeuty takes it up — My patrons in spite of myself refuse me their protection — Decorations which begin at home — A proof of the esteem in which Pope Gregory VI designed to hold me — A mysterious call — Do they want to make me a cardinal? — They want to bestow a certain Italian order upon me — My answer to this proposal — Silent for thirty years — The papers
under t!
Good o

Year's Day —
— A gentleman

who frequents ghosts — ‘Your father is decorated’ — ‘I did it’ — I ask to be made a Commander — Lambert Thiboust’s heartfelt cry — The fox too ripe for the grapes — The best of Republics — There will never be any more fighting — At the guardroom with Frederick Lemaitre — Sham patrols hinder the real patrols — I spend an evening at Lafayette’s house — What I see there — Abbotsford — The Romainville woods as they were formerly — La Poule Russe and its punch — How a woman who vended Cashmere shawls became tender — The Tournebride — Robert or the restaurateur who illuminates — Rides on horseback — I force my wife to take horse exercise in spite of herself — My repentance — ‘I prefer that’

213

CHAPTER IX

House for sale — “That won’t bind you” — M and Madame Cartery — An inspection of the little house — My wife has an answer to every thing — Five thousand francs and the expenses — Un de plus — Arnal rescues us — We have “our home” — My shrubs and my beds — No drinking water — My wife is frightened — A nocturnal adventure — The bind of thieves — I nearly commit a crime — The Romainville ball — Amedee de Beauplan — Mademoiselle Plessy — I shoot — I shoot no more — The Republic takes my guns — How I worked on the grass — The shawl — *Lacet anguis in herba* — Recollections of my lawsuit — M de Vatisménil — The other advocate — My two brothers Henry and Jean-Pierre — A Duteli General and a French Colonel — Why it was a good thing that the Colonel retired — United — Madame Gaigneau wishes to be called Madame de Koek — Count d’Orsay — A letter from Bulwer-Lytton — I don’t think any more of the lawsuit I lost — My philosophy — The animals I love — Frontin, or the talking eat

245

CHAPTER X

A man is never satisfied — “Raise your roof” — The house of my dreams — And there is a billiard-table — We enter upon my Abbotsford, Number 2 — The advantage of having a hair-merchant as a tenant — Why I wear a moustache — Sudden catastrophe — My wife’s death — A word about Caroline and Henry, my children — The story about Victor Hugo and the 4500 quarts of rum — Joy once more at Romainville — I buy a wood — My theatre — What used to be played and how it was played — The play, a ball and supper — My usual guests at Romainville — Charles Monselet comes too late — Old age and the gout

272

Death of Charles Paul de Koek A note by his son, Henry de Koek

290

MEMOIRS OF PAUL DE KOCK

CHAPTER I

My father John Conrad de Koch — The reasons why I am not a Republican — From Holland to France — A first Marriage — Five Children — Second Marriage — A birth and a death. — A banking house in Paris — The Dutch refugees with the army of the North — Dumouriez — Consequences of the battle of Nieuwpoort — The return of my father and mother to Paris — The house at Passy — M Maron Protestant minister — Colonel Saumur — Anacharsis Clootz — Hebert — Ronsin — Arrest — John Conrad de Koch before the Revolutionary Tribunal — Superfluous defence — Sentenced — On the scaffold. — Sequestration of his goods — Consequences of the sentence of the Revolutionary Tribunal — Text of the inventory drawn up after his death (22 Germinal An II) — My cradle is seized — Citizen Anthony Ravigneau and the jewels and silver plate of a victim — A portrait saved — A visit from Fouquier Tinville — My mother threatened with imprisonment at the Abbaye Prison — She owes her safety to me — The Ninth Thermidor

Like Father, like son is a saying which for the most part is an erroneous one. My father was a Republican whilst I am not firstly because the Republic murdered my father a reason which me

thinks, should dispense me from giving any others, and secondly because I hold that whole nations can no more live in unity than can families. In the course of my long existence, I have not met with more than two or three families, out of a hundred whom I have mixed with, where concord reigned, where the several members were not ready to come to blows over the slightest difference, whether relating to money or to questions of vanity, and the natural conclusions which I drew from this observation were that union amongst the several members of a whole people is the most chimerical of Utopias, of dreams the least realizable.

"Liberty, Equality, Fraternity" Before smearing the walls with these three words, they should be engraved on the hearts of the people.

Unfortunately, the minds of men cannot be turned to the same uses as the walls of buildings, and for a long time back envy and hatred have been taught in France to the people instead of love and charity . ,

My father, John Conrad de Kock, advocate at the Hague, was born in Holland in 1755. He was rich and a nobleman. I mention this latter fact, without vanity, although I admit that I would just as soon be the son of a Somebody as of a Nobody, but principally to rectify the mistakes made by Lamartine and M. Louis Blanc. Lamartine in his *History of the Girondins* and Blanc in his *History of the French Revolution* democratized my father's

name by far too much taking such liberties with it as to spell it *Koch* or *Cock*. My father was a noble man as may be seen in Riest's *Universal Heraldry* which was printed and published in Gouda in 1860. He was noble and consequently rich and happy, and in 1787 he took it into his head to come to Paris where already revolutionary ideas were fermenting.

As I have said my father was one of those men who believe in Liberty Equality and Fraternity, elsewhere than smeared on the walls.

We shall see what his illusions cost him.

John Conrad de Koch had been married ten years when he came to France. He had had five children by his first wife Maria Petronilla Merkus two sons Henry and John Peter born in Heusden the former in 1779 and the latter in 1780 and three daughters Goverta Cornelis and Deborah. He took his two sons to Paris with him and left his daughters in Holland in the care of one of his sisters. His wife died in Paris on December 1st 1789.

John Conrad de Koch married his second wife Anna Maria Kirsberger in Paris on December 8th 1790. She was born at Bile in Switzerland on June 14th 1764 and was the widow of Claude Perret by whom she had had three sons.

Of this second marriage there were born at an interval of two years two children namely In 1791 a girl who only lived a few months In 1793, a boy who received the name of Charles Paul de

Kock, your obedient servant

1793! I was born in 1793, that is to say in the most dreadful days of the Terror, at a time when nobody, whether big or little, on rising in the morning was sure of going to bed, in the evening, with his head on his shoulders

I was born on May 21st, 1793 and on March 24th, 1794, my father died by the guillotine

So it must be admitted, that if I am gay by nature, and that if, for more than half a century, my indefatigable pen has never ceased to divert and amuse the public, it is certainly not thanks to the fairies at my christening, such as the old storybooks tell us about

An unflinching patriot, my father left Holland when the wife of William V, hereditary Stadholder of the United Provinces, appealed to her brother, Frederick William II, King of Prussia, against the party called the constitutionals. On the day when 30,000 Prussians entered Amsterdam, Conrad de Kock left for Paris

But whilst resigning himself to exile, he had not abandoned the hope of freeing his country, and whilst waiting till France, free herself, a republican France, should stretch out her hand to the Batavian Republic, my father, who knew that one of the best ways of helping one's country is to have much gold to place at its disposal, busied himself with a view to increase his fortune and on January 1st, 1791, entered into partnership with one of the principal

bunking houses of Paris, the firm of Sartorius Chock
held

This partnership prospered but the rapid course of events proved to my father only too speedily that in a time of Revolution it is dangerous to wish to make money even for the common good. In such times every rich man however generous he may be is for the most part nothing but a pallid. The events of the 10th of August 1792 which ended in the imprisonment of the Royal Family in the Temple—that melancholy to the scissoid—gave my father food for serious reflection. Blood had flowed like water during this day; it was still to flow in torrents, and this expectation distressing as it was, whilst it did not induce my father to abandon his liberal ideas prompted him to the resolution that, if he must die his life should be given for his own country instead of being sacrificed a slave in France.

He accordingly dissolved his partnership at the end and towards the beginning of 1793 betook himself as one of the twelve members of the Bruylants Committee to Louvain the head quarters of the army of the North in whose ranks the Dutch refugees were united in a legion under the command of General Driendels.

My mother insisted on accompanying my father, although at that time my advent was expected. M. de Cock was a brilliant talker clever and witty, a man of remarkably handsome appearance and of

most elegant manners, his wife was pretty and amiable, so both were received with open arms Dumouriez, especially, showed the greatest liking for them A fatal friendship, which later on was one of the principal causes of my father's downfall and destruction

Need I tell you, who, I presume, know it as well as I do, how, after losing the battle of Nerwinde, Dumouriez, feeling himself as little able to fight against the National Convention as he was to face the enemy, arrested the Minister of War, Beurnonville, and the four commissioners, Camus, Lamarque, Bancal and Quinette, who had been sent by the Convention to bring him back to Paris, and how, deserting his army, he fled for refuge, accompanied by the Duc de Chartres, to the camp of the Prince of Coburg

A very poor way, be it said, of making good a defeat—by an act of treachery

Be that as it may, the army of the North being defeated and scattered, and the liberation of Holland by France being in consequence indefinitely postponed, if not altogether to be despaired of, my father returned to Paris He owned a house in Passy and went to live there with his wife, who was on the eve of her confinement At the same time, as though under a presentiment of his fate he wished to protect from its consequences, as far as possible, the two beings who were dearest to him, he sent off his two sons to Belgium, in the charge of one of his

relations.

What has become of the house where I was born? It was destroyed no doubt, burnt down, swept away with so many more during some popular movement for later on under the Empire when I went to look at it, I could find no traces of it, except some vestiges of the garden which my mother fancied she recognized. It was the simplest of abodes the least likely of houses to excite the envy of the mob. My father used to receive friends there, fellow countrymen for the most part Van Hocq Thoosd Saint Aman Prop stein Pastor Maron were amongst his visitors. My father was a Protestant, and had me also baptized as one. Of all those who used regularly to visit him in his house in Passy, M. Maron alone survived him for any length of time. He lived till 1833 and to the last never failed to come and see me twice a year spring and autumn to beg my alms for the poor, in memory of my father. I need hardly say that not once did I turn a deaf ear to these appeals.

Unfortunately those named above were not my father's only friends. He was more or less intimate with Colonel Saumur, ex governor of Pondichery with Anacharsis Clootz the orator of the human species and partisan of the Universal Republic and also used to receive Hébert and Ronsin the two leaders of the Cordelier faction. M. Maron used to say to me of Ronsin that he always looked like a bulldog in a fury. Hébert was a little dandy slim and elegant who always dressed with the greatest

care and used musk, amber and pomatum in abundance He was a charming man . . . when not writing his horrible *Père Duchesne*

Ronsin, Hébert, Saumur, Anacharis Clootz and five or six others, wished to overthrow Robespierre, who still, at that time, was all-powerful in the Convention Arrested in their homes, on the night of March 17th, they were taken to the Conciergerie My father was not arrested at Passy until the following morning Fouquier-Tinville accused him of having conspired against the Government, and especially of having been a friend of a traitor, Dumouriez He refuted these accusations before the Revolutionary Tribunal and without difficulty

"I am a Dutchman," he said, "and if, on fleeing from my oppressed country, I asked for shelter in the French Republic, it was in order to serve her, as far as lay in my power, with my intellect and with my blood, in the hopes that, victorious over the coalition of the Kings, she would extend to my country also the benefits of liberty It was certainly not to take any part in her internal discussions As to General Dumouriez, it is true that my hand has often grasped his But at that time—can you have forgotten this?—the repeated successes of his sword made me, no less than you, believe in his patriotism If you must kill all these who, even as I, have loved Dumouriez, the hero of Valmy and of Jemmapes, you will have to immolate more than thirty thousand soldiers "

But as everybody knows no defence held good in the dock of the Revolutionary Tribunal. The prisoner was allowed to speak for form's sake the public prosecutor alone was listened to. My father was sentenced to death with all the rest of the Hébertists. He went to his death like the courageous man he was. He was executed the last but one after Vincent and before Anacharsis Clootz. M Maron was in the crowd and stood just opposite the scaffold. Before yielding his neck to the executioner my father cast a last glance at the pastor, a glance which seemed to say I think of those I love Let them not forget me.

Although I never had the happiness of knowing my father I have never forgotten him. I have always remembered and always shall remember that he was guillotined by the Republic.

And that is the reason why I am not and never shall be a Republican. If anybody thinks me in the wrong so much the worse for him.

It was through M Maron also that my mother heard of my father's death. She had remained in Passy guarded by two *sans culottes*, waiting for the public prosecutor to decide her fate. My mother was obliged to pay these two guardians six francs a day each to escape the alternative of being taken to prison. Now be it remarked that Fouquier Tinville, who for a very good reason had no doubt whatever how my father's trial would end, had sealed up everything in our house on the day of his arrest. So

had my mother not happened to have a few pieces of gold in her pocket, she would have been forced to join my father in the Conciergerie, being prevented from taking any of the money that was in the house

The National Convention, I may add, was as expeditious in carrying out its sentences, as it was in getting its *dues*

On the evening of the 21st of Germinal, the worthy Pastor Maron, braving the dangers to which all who ventured to show any interest in the "aristocrats" exposed themselves, came to tell my mother that she was a widow

And, on the morning of the next day, one of the district administrators, came to Passy, acting in the name of the law, to draw up an inventory and valuation of the furniture, works of art, clothes and other effects having belonged to the man who, two days previously, had been sent to the scaffold by the Revolutionary Tribunal

"What, can one inherit from him one has murdered?" asks a poet The French Republic had no such scruples of conscience She had not the slightest objection to pocket the proceeds of the sale of the goods of her victims.

I have before me a copy of the text of the inventory in question I copy some pages from it, word for word, for the edification of my readers

DEPARTMENT OF PARIS
Franciade District.

*Copy of the official Inventory and valuation after
the Decease of*

CONRADE KOCK

sentenced to Death

MUNICIPALITY OF PASSY

22nd Germinal Year Two of the French Republic one and indivis oic

This day, 22nd Germinal Year Two of the French Republic one and indivisible I Anthony Ravigneau administrator of the Franciade District a commissioner appointed by the said Directorate pursuant to its order dated the 19th Germinal to betake myself to the house in Passy of the late Conrade Koc, sentenced to death by the Revolutionary Tribunal to inspect and pass as whole and unbroken the seals previously imposed in this house by C Gautron Commissioner of the Department as also to draw up an inventory and valuation of the Furniture and Effects being in the Said House and belonging to C Conrad Koc, did in consequence of my said Powers betake myself thither on the day and in the year mentioned above assisted by the Citizens Pierre Hanvel and François Harivel, both notables of the Commune of Passy, as also by the Citizens Lelong Expert Appraiser and Douet, our secretary who took the prescribed oath and did then proceed to make an inventory and valuation of the

furniture and effects in the following Manner.

Here follows a list of the furniture, provisions, odds and ends, and clothes, from the dining-room chairs upholstered in crimson "Utrecht" velvet, down to the "Lamp in the Chinese style" and the "little Bastille under a glass globe" which ornamented my mother's bed-room, from the barrels and bottles of wine in the cellar down to my cradle, which stood beside my mother's bed, "a small cradle with its curtains, a small horsehair mattress, a small counterpane," from the carriage, saddles, bits, bridles and halters found in the stable and coach-house, to the roll-top writing-table and backgammon board which stood in my father's study. The inventory covers both sides of twelve closely-written pages, of large foolscap paper, stamped with the stamp of the Commune of Paris, and the total valuation totals up to a sum of *sixty-two thousand four hundred and twenty francs*, a sum which, considering the very low figure at which each item or lot was valued (notably a hundred bottles of Champagne, which were set down at 50 francs, that is to say at five-pence the bottle), must have been more than quadrupled at the sale.

Nor were the plate and the jewelry, weighing together sixty marks, five ounces, included in this valuation. Citizen Anthony Ravigneau, 'administrator-commissioner declares that 'as to the jewels and plate, he has taken these to convey them to the Directorate of the Franciade District, that an in-

ventory thereof may be made at the said Director ate

O Citizen Anthony Ravigneau are you quite sure that you conveyed these sixty marks of gold and silver whither you say? Did not a little of it stick to your fingers whilst you were on your way?

All the same the death of the Dutchman Conrad de Koch, was good business for the Commune of Paris

As for me, as I read over these pages on which in dry lines are numbered and set forth facing the absurd valuations all the things which the Republic stole from my parents it is not on the items of gold and silver that my eyes tarry with regret but rather on such things as these

195 Two bonbon boxes of pale tortoise shell a small ivory writing stand with pen and pencil thereto a tablet of white ivory

197 A lacquer snuff box a pair of English pistols.

209 A small writing table Thirteen small pictures representing different portraits

These were family portraits miniatures painted by great contemporary artists, marvels of art as my mother has told me Bonbon boxes ivory tablets a table a writing stand a snuff box which my father loved to use pistols which he had received as a present from the Duc de Chartres in the army of the North

All that my mother was able to save was a por

trait of her unhappy husband, which she concealed on her person

That is all that the Republic left me of my father's belongings

That was little

The document ends as follows

"And seeing that nothing more was found to be set down in this inventory and valuation, we have closed this our present protocol, after having busied ourselves from nine o'clock in the morning till nine o'clock at night, without interruption save and except during meal-time, and have left as guardian of our said seals as also of the furniture and effects set down in this inventory and valuation, the Citizen Gilhoz, who has taken them in charge and will produce them to us whole and intact, at such time as he may be requested by us so to do, which he did after having taken the prescribed oath and having signed with us, the above-said commissioner, this our present protocol, as have also done the Citizens Pierre Harivel and François Harivel, both notables, and the Citizens Lelong, Expert Appraiser and Douet our secretary, the day and year given above

"Ravigneau, F Harivel, P Harivel, Gilhoz, Lelong, and Douet"

Beneath this is written

"Registered at Neuilly, the 23rd Germinal, Year Two, fo 51 Collection of duty deferred till after the sale

Thibault"

Beneath this again

Received the 22nd Prairial Year Two of the Republic thirty six francs as fee for registering the present inventory after the sale

Thibault

So the sale only took place two months later and for two months the generous National Convention allowed my mother to live amongst her impounded goods on the condition that she should make the least use possible of them and above all not wear or deteriorate them in any way Which must have been very comfortable for her

Let us be fair the Convention through Fouquier Tinville did more than that for my mother and by the same token for me seeing that if I had been deprived of her it is more than probable that as I was then only ten months old I should have been somewhat embarrassed how to provide myself with the means of existence

At the beginning of Floreal or April that is about ten days after my father's execution Fouquier Tinville remembering that he had not entirely dealt with the case of the Dutchman who had abetted the treachery of Dumouriez and had attempted to overthrow Robespierre presented himself at our house in Passy accompanied by three of his familiar bravos

I have let my mother describe in the words in which she often described it to me afterwards what then happened

"It was one morning I was walking in our little garden, carrying you in my arms You were laughing, you seemed radiantly happy, because the sun of the spring was beginning to shine on the sprouting leaves, and I, I was weeping as I looked at a rose-tree which your father had planted, the previous autumn, under the window of my bedroom, happy at the thought how the perfume of its flowers would delight me, his wife

"Suddenly, Geneviève, my good Baden servant, who in spite of all my misfortunes had stubbornly refused to leave me, came running up, pale as death

"'Madame,' she stammered, 'there are four men asking to see you—Oh God, oh God—and I saw at once who they were, three of them are the same who came here to fetch master'

"And so it was Four men came out of the house and walked towards me

"Geneviève had made no mistake Three of them had been in the gang which arrested your father

"The fourth, who came first, oh, I recognized him at once, although I had only seen him once or twice in Paris, the fourth was the *Public Accuser* It was Fouquier-Tinville

"Fouquier-Tinville, at that time, must have been about fifty He was a thin man of middle stature, and was dressed simply but with some elegance He took off his hat as he came up, his companions following his example, and said, with a politeness which contrasted with the vile address in the second

person singular which was then obligatory.

"Citizenship our visit I presume surprises thee disagreeably. But I regret to say thou must understand that it is impossible that thou shouldst remain here any longer. Thy husband has been tried and sentenced. Thou also in thy turn must appear before the Revolutionary Tribunal. And in the meanwhile we are compelled to conduct thee to the Abbaye."

To the Abbaye. Oh well I knew for what place one left the Abbaye. My tongue close to my palate. However I was able to say :

And why should I go before the Revolutionary Tribunal? What have I done to be sent to prison? I am a woman! What am I accused of? Is it not enough to have killed my husband? Why should I be killed also?

Fouquier Tinville as calm as ever was about to retort, when somebody stopped him.

It was you Paul, you my darling son.

Astonished no doubt at the sight of these strange faces astonished rather than frightened just as the terrible purveyor to Republican Justice was about to open his lips and say that as the wife of a man guillotined the day before I could with but ill grace refuse to admit that it was equitable that I should be guillotined on the day following you burst out into one of those peals of laughter which babies laugh the delicious expression of a gladness of which the secret is known to God alone.

"I trembled I tried to hush you I was afraid that your gaiety might displease these men

"But smiling as he looked at you, Fouquier-Tinville said

"'Is that thy child, citoyenne?'

"'Yes, citoyen'

"'How old is he?'

"'Ten months'

"'He is a fine child for his age Where is his nurse?'

"'I give him the breast myself'

"'Ah, it's thou—Ah, it's thou who—'

"Having thus repeated these words twice, Fouquier-Tinville looked at us both, for a few seconds without speaking My tears ran They seemed to say 'If you send me to the scaffold, what will become of my child?' You, Paul, you went on laughing Blessed laughter, which assuredly did more for us than all my tears

"'Well, then,' said suddenly the Public Accuser, speaking to his companions, 'since the Citoyenne Kock has a child at breast, I don't see that there is any objection to her being left here a little while longer Let us say, until her child is weaned'

"'But,' objected one of the men, 'everything in this house has been seized in the name of the law Everything here is going to be sold'

"'Well and what then?' said Fouquier-Tinville 'The citoyenne will buy back her bed and the child's cradle, that's all If she has got no money, she is

pretty enough to find somebody to lend her some
So that's settled citoyenne Thou shalt remain here
five or six months. That will give thee time to wean
thy child *Salut et Fraternite!*

And Fouquier Tinville withdrew followed by
his acolytes He walked away rapidly it may be so
as not to hear my words of thanks The Public
Accuser could listen to no words of thanks because
he had no right to show mercy

'Yet I after Fouquier Tinville and his men had
gone I fell on my knees and thanked God as I
pressed you Paul to my breast and covered you
with kisses

For it was to you that in all truth I owed my
life.

The fact is and you must admit it, that for a
young man of ten months old I had not distinguished
myself too badly in this affair Still in swaddling
clothes I had saved my mother's life

And looking over ancient history I can find few
cases of filial affection which can be compared on
the ground of precocity with that

For my mother did not go to the Abbaye and
that means that she did not go to the scaffold
What a touch of humanity in a tiger's heart had been
achieved by the course of events Fou
quier Tinville had authorized my mother to remain
five or six months in Passy Now the third month
after Floreal was Thermidor, as the Republican

calender had it, and, as everybody knows, it was on the 9th Thermidor that Robespierre and his party fell and that the Terror died the death My mother had thus no longer any reason to fear on my account that people would come and bid her prepare for death, because I had reached an age at which I could live, even deprived of her

CHAPTER II

The morrow of the 9th Thermidor — If I were a historian — What occurred in my family — My mother's third husband — Head-chalk and gambler — The Palais Royal — History of the first volume of an old novel — The little old woman — Origin of a vocation — Why I was not sent to school — The venerable M^r Bedel — A violin master M^r Mengal — The tune from the *Caliph of Bagdad* — A bale on the fifth floor — How the good people of Paris used to amuse themselves in 1810 — The charm of meeting with strangers

If I were what is called a serious writer—that is to say a writer who has taken upon himself to relate historical events and to comment upon them with more or less talent and more or less impartiality according to his literary merit and his personal opinions—it would be easy for me by utilizing the stories told me by eye witnesses whom I knew when I was a young man to write a score of pages on the events which in Paris and throughout the whole of France followed on Thermidor the Ninth Very sad events they were Although the Reign of Terror was over, France whilst breathing more freely, was no nearer swimming in that ocean of happiness which the Revolution had promised France

had no bread. Corn had not sprouted under the rain of blood And you know the proverb "When there is no more hay in the manger, the horses quarrel" So instead of eating bread, people grumbled in Paris from morn till eve, clamouring for the 1793 Constitution, shouting, yelling and fighting in the streets Now and again some aristocrat, who could not help matters, was hung up on a lamp-post

Poor mob It should have learned, from thousands and thousands of accumulated proofs, that it is not by killing that the best living is earned

So, were I an historian, I should write you a history, or something like one, but I am only a novelist relating his souvenirs, and I will accordingly draw a curtain over the political events of the end of the National Convention, of the Directoire and the Consulate, and with one stroke of the pen, jumping from 1794 to 1806, from the Republic to the Empire, describe how at the age of thirteen, I felt the first aspirations to literary fame awaken in my breast

At thirteen! There was precocity!

But I have already told you that I did not wait to be old before distinguishing myself

Let me first give some particulars about my family They are essential

In 1806, it was already seven years since my mother was no longer called Madame de Kock, but Madame Gaigneau Yes, yes, she had married for

CHAPTER II

-3

the third time Oh, my mother like the heroine of one of my novels was a *gaillarde* in the good acceptance of the word that is to say a woman of strong will and great intelligence Having mourned my father for five years my mother said to herself one day as she noticed how I was growing that it was not on tears that she could bring me up One of her brothers Joseph Kirsberger was a tradesman in Geneva. She had entrusted the three sons of her first marriage before marrying M de Kock in 1796 to this brother who loved them like a father Joseph Kirsberger was rich and sent his sister some money now and again But it is difficult for a woman with a child to live on some money now and again The Republic had confiscated all M de Kock's possessions in France and as to the property which he had left in Holland it was quite natural that this should benefit his first children his two sons and three daughters who had returned to their native land rather than me

I shall speak later on of my half brothers on my father's side, Henry and John Peter who returned to Holland in 1793 and were adopted as her children by the Batavian Republic for till their death I remained on terms of affection with them As to my half brothers on my mother's side, I shall say nothing as I never saw them and in fact hardly ever heard a word about them Silence in return for silence

My mother then married again in 1799 Her

husband was M^{me} Gaigneau, head-clerk in the Revenue Office. M^{me} Gaigneau had no income outside his salary, but he was a gentlemanly and amiable man and in point of age was well suited to my mother. When they married he was forty and she thirty-five. Unfortunately, my dear stepfather had one of those faults which fatally bar the way to comfortable circumstances for a family. He was as bad a gambler as Beverley.

Excellent M^{me} Gaigneau, how often, of an evening, when my mother thought that he was taking me for an innocent walk on the boulevards, he used to leave me, all alone, waiting for him for hours together, under the big chestnut-trees planted by Cardinal Richelieu in the Palais-Royal Garden, whilst he was throwing his gold on the roulette-tables at No 113, or No 154. He died in 1826 and, shortly before he closed his eyes for ever, he said to me

"Never mind, old fellow, since I have been ill in bed, I have discovered a wonderful system. You'll see I must get well quick, and then I will make us all rich!"

I must admit that I did not at all mind waiting for my step-father in the Palais-Royal Garden. I used to play with little boys of my own age, I used to listen to the music at the door of the Café des Aveugles, or to the man with the tambourine at the Caveau du Sauvage, I used to stroll along the wooden galleries and stare with curious eyes at the

women who, fine weather or foul walked there always fresh pink and smiling with their curled locks covered over with broad *coiffes* which were pleated into large pleats with their *caracos* their little *casa quins* and their baskets When M Gaigneau had won—I could always tell it from his face—he used to stand treat at the *Cafe de Foy* or at the *Cafe des Mille Colonnes* when he had lost we returned home straight as a cannon ball

On such occasions that is to say when he had lost he never failed to say to me as we were walking along

You needn't tell your mother

I understood what he left out namely that he had left me alone for three hours.

I used to answer No no don't be frightened Papa I shan't tell Mamma anything

When he had won and in consequence had treated me to an ice or to a glass of chocolate he never said this He had paid for my silence and so had nothing to fear from my chatter

Now on one of these evenings one summer evening as the night was closing in and my father had just entered one of his favourite hells I was wandering about the garden to find some mates for a game of leap-frog when I saw under a chair at the foot of a tree a small book in chamois leather binding, which I snatched up and opened

It was the first volume of

THE THREE GIL-BLAS
or
FIVE YEARS OF MADNESS

History for some, a Novel for others

The whole set forth after the manuscript of one of
the three friends, and published by

LAMARTELIÈRE

I copy this title-page from a copy of the book
which I bought later on, as a souvenir, and placed in
my library It is rare enough to-day

My attention was first attracted by a steel plate,
which formed the frontispiece of the volume The
engraving represented three young men in their un-
derclothes who were dancing round a pile of open
moneybags which were heaped upon the floor Under-
neath was the following text

"He makes us dance in our shirts round a heap of
money "

What were the three Gil-Blas? (No doubt, the
three young men who were dancing) And where
had they got this pile of money which seemed to
delight them so?

Such, we will understand, were my first thoughts
as I examined the picture At the same time be-
fore I ventured to begin to read the book, I looked
all round to see if I could not find the owner of the
book and restore it to him

There was nobody So I sat down on a bench
and greedily fell to reading I read on until it was

quite dark and went on reading in my bedroom after I got home, until I had finished the book without saying anything about it to my parents. Instinctively I felt that it was not a book for little boys. How disappointed I was to find that this volume was only 1 part of a book. End of Vol I was printed on page 181. So there was a second volume perhaps a third and fourth. I should never know the further adventures of Charles Frederick and Henry, the three Gil Blas. We had parted company as they were fleeing from Strasburg after a sanguinary duel with three insolent officers of the garrison and I was never told now what became of them! I felt so sorry that I did not sleep a wink that night. However as it turned out I got the whole story to read.

The next day, my father had as usual taken me to the Palais Royal on the customary pretext of taking me a walk on the boulevards, and had left me in the garden whilst he went off to flirt with the red and the black.

I had taken the book with me, to read it over again and—virtuous resolution—to restore it to its owner if chance threw him in my way.

Now it just happened that the owner a little old lady, was sitting at the very place where the day before she had lost the first volume of Lamartine's novel on the chair, under the tree in the chestnut alley. She was reading the second volume. I had but to look at the colour of the binding to see that

I rushed up to her and holding out my find, I cried

"This is your book, Madame, is it not?"

The little old lady looked up, and, evidently very pleased, exclaimed

"Ah! my little friend So you have found my book"

"Yes, Madame, I found it last night"

"And you have brought it back to me It is very good of you Many thanks Now what would you like for your trouble? Sweets? A toy? We'll go and buy it"

The little old lady had risen as she spoke, but I did not budge She was surprised and said

"Well, won't you come? Don't you want a box of sweets, or a cup and ball, or a hoop?"

I shook my head

"Well, what do you want?"

"I should like you to lend me the continuation of the book, madame"

"The continuation Do you mean to say that you have read the first volume?

"O, yes, Madame, I have read every word of it and I liked it very much"

"You don't say so"

The little old lady smiled, but she seemed to hesitate about granting my request She thought no doubt that the book was hardly suited for a boy of my age

It would be, however, a mistake to imagine that

this novel was one of those licentious publications which appeared in such abundance under the Directoire. Although it contains some light episodes it is on the whole as moral as it is interesting a fact which has been admitted by our dramatic authors who have taken from it the materials of half a dozen plays as for instance *The Siege of the Bell Tower* which was in Anibigu success *Florella* played at the Opera Comique and *The Blue Triangle* at the Palais Royal.

But to return to my little old lady

She had no doubt come to the conclusion that there was no reason to fear that that lightness which had at first alarmed her on my account would do me any harm for the reason that I probably did not understand it and that what had pleased me in the book was not the gallant adventures of the Three Gil Bias but their sights their hairbreadth escapes through windows and up chimneys and their tricks and pranks of every description.

In short she handed me the volume and said

All right, little fellow Here is the continuation
Sit down by me and read it

But you Madame?

Oh I, I've plenty of time I'll read the paper
And does the book finish with this second volume?

No there are two more

And will you lend me them also

Certainly But won't you be scolded for read

ing instead of playing You are 'not here alone, surely?"

"Yes, Madame. That is, that it's just as if I was alone because my Papa brings me here in the evenings but as soon as we are here, he goes off to, to his business and only fetches me away later"

"Ah, ah"

Did she understand what sort of business it was which occupied my father so regularly in the Palais Royal and took him away from me, and was it that that dispelled her last scruples?—A gambler's child! There was no need to practise too strict morality with him Be that as it may, the little old lady let me read the second volume of *The Three Gil-Blas* in peace, and, true to her word, brought me, on the following days, the two last volumes which I devoured as greedily as the first

Now did this reading have a real influence on my mind? Did it really fix my vocation? I think so, for from that day on I could never see a book without wishing to read it Till then I had been more or less indifferent on the subject of books We had some classical novels at home, *Don Quichotte*, *Le Diable Boiteux*, *Gil-Blas*, the genuine *Gil-Blas*, and I gave my parents no rest until they had lent them to me To please me, my father also procured for me the works of Ducray-Dumain and Madame Cthin Did I not tremble as I read *Victor ou l'Enfant de la forêt*, and *Cœlina ou l'Enfant du Mystère*? Did I not weep over *Malvina* and *Amélie*

de Mansfield? But I had less taste for tears and trembling than for laughter *The Three Gil Blas* had hit the mark, the gay natural style of book was my favourite style With what joy then did I three years later read Pigault Lebrun's *The Barons of Felsheim* Lamarteliere had pointed out the way Pigault traced it for me It has been said that I imitated him in my first and weakest novel *My Wife's Child* and that is quite true And what writer is there whose first work is not an imitation of his favourite author? Since then I can say with pride I have always been myself let the reader judge for himself Pigault wrote from imagination I wrote from Nature He invented—as for me I never told anything but what I had seen

Well Lamarteliere and Pignault Lebrun assisting I wrote two volumes right off the reel when I was seventeen years old With a common accord all the publishers in Paris refused to print them

But I must not anticipate I have first to speak of the early days of my youth

Between ourselves they were not always very happy I have told you that my step father was a gambler which means that all his earnings melted away at *trente et quarante* and at the roulette table This naturally provoked my mother to outbursts of passion Oh when he happened to win all went well There was abundance of everything at home we drunk the best wines we had the finest dinners and we went to the theatres My mother was very

fond of the play and often took me there But when, at the end of the month, when salaries were paid and the tradespeople wanted to be paid also, M Gaigneau came home with empty pockets, the house used to ring with cries which would have driven a deaf man out of his wits

"You want my son and me to die in the gutter, I suppose, sir"

"Don't get angry, dear I had no luck to-day, but to-morrow "

"To-morrow! The wretch! He hasn't a half-penny left and he talks of going back to the table!"

"But I must get my money back, by Jove I shan't always be unlucky"

"Poor Paul, poor darling child, it's on your account that my heart's breaking Oh, how wrong it was of me to give you this man as a second father What will become of you Paul, since the man who ought to guide you and protect you, who ought to think of nothing but your happiness and your future, does nothing but waste his money in gambling As for me, Paul, I feel it, I shall not be able to live this life of privations and misery much longer My health is breaking down day by day Rejoice, sir, soon I shall no more be here to reproach you for your misconduct You will have brought me to the grave To the grave, to which my unhappy child will soon follow me,—for want of bread"

M Gaigneau did not bring my mother to a grave He died in 1826, and she did not close her eyes in

death till 1854 at the age of ninety A fine old age which seems to prove whatever my mother widow of three husbands might have said on the subject that sorrows do not injure the health. And I must admit that my stepfather seemed to be but moderately impressed by the dismal picture of his widow hood which my mother drew for his edification Not that he was a bad man or that he had no affection for her but one gets *blase* in all things and perhaps my mother rather overdrew the picture in her efforts to appal the culprit When she had screamed to her heart's content he used to shrug his shoulders and murmur

'What a fuss about a few crowns to the bad! But hang it all I shall get them back these crowns to morrow All that's wanted is only a little run

Then he would kiss me and say

Don't you fret my lad You have only got potatoes to eat to day to morrow I will treat you to truffles'

My education of course had to suffer from the want of agreement between my mother and her third husband and especially from the almost constant want of money which resulted from my father's passion for gambling When I reached my seventh year my stepfather took me to a little school in the vicinity where I was assured of good treatment. My mother had strongly objected to this arrangement for she thought me much too young

to be separated from her During the first week all went well I liked going to school where I found little mates to laugh and play with But on the ninth day, whilst playing I got a bump on the forehead which swelled up as big and as red as an Easter Egg, in spite of all the bandages and pieces of five francs which the master pressed against it When I was brought home by the servant and my mother saw me in this state, she became a lioness in fury, a woman no longer

"I knew what would happen," she roared "It shows that one wants to kill a child of that age when one sends it to school My darling son! They would kill you, the murderers, the brigands! But you shan't go back, no, you shan't go back to that accursed school Do you hear me, sir?" (This to M Gaignéau) "This boy is my son and I won't let him be murdered And so he shall not leave me again"

"All right But then who is going to teach him to read and write?"

"Oh, that's dreadfully difficult, isn't it? We'll get a tutor to come to the house, that's all"

This was a more expensive matter than sending me to school, and M Gaignéau, not from motives of economy but out of prudence, did not care to incur too many expenses However, for the sake of quiet, one day when the night before he had been lucky at the tables, he hunted up a suitable tutor and brought him home, having, prudently again, paid him three months in advance He was forty or for-

tv five and his name was Bedel He was as gentle as a sheep an animal which in physiognomy as well as I am inclined to believe in its not very developed intelligence he somewhat resembled

The very first thing that my mother said to him was Sir you are not to ill treat my son

Madame he answered it is foreign to my character as to my principles to ill treat my pupils

I adore my son sir I could not allow him to suffer the slightest corporal punishment on any pretence whatever

I have the honour to repeat to you Madame that I never allow myself to administer to the children whose education is entrusted to me even the merest fillip of the fingers

I have also to ask you sir, to go easy with my son in his studies He has a delicate constitution and I fear the consequences of overworking him

My system as a professor harmonizes entirely with your maternal solicitude *Chi è a piano è a sano* such is my device That should satisfy you that I have no intentions of overworking Master Paul

And M Bedel certainly did not overwork me He led me on so gently that when I was eight years old I could only just read But was it the poor man's fault I will wager that out of every eight days there were seven on which I did no lessons Either I was ill and it would have tired me to work or again my mother was going out and wanted me to accom

pany her And then there were intermissions in the tutor's pay, owing to low-water in the family purse There were times when hundreds of lessons had not been paid for He kept on coming to teach me, because, no doubt, he had not too many pupils and because his kindness as a master added to his patience as a creditor had brought us to consider him as a friend He was only paid occasionally, but he was often made to stay to dinner, so that there was some kind of a set-off All the same it is not to be wondered at that under these circumstances, my education was anything but satisfactory When I was fourteen years old, M Gaigneau, who, roulette excepted, was a sensible man, spoke of sending me to a public school, but at the first word which he ventured on this subject my mother exploded, like a bomb A public school! Ah! she had not forgotten, what had happened to her darling boy, when he had only been a week at school *He had been brought back to her dying* Never, never would she consent to my being sent to a public school And what reason was there for sending me to a public school? Did not one learn as well at home? Was not M Bedel as capable as a tutor as any one else?

M Gaigneau might have had a good deal to say on this head, but my mother continued

"And besides, sir, you talk of public schools, of boarding and so on I suppose you are trying to be funny To put a boy as a boarder at a public school costs money, I can tell you And how will

you pay the heavy bills for my son's education in one of these establishments when you can't even pay a poor little twopenny halfpenny tutor his wages regularly

This was true and my father seemed to see it for he said no more on the subject I remained the pupil of the man whom my mother with an estimation which was truer than she herself perhaps imagined it to be had described as a twopenny half penny tutor And so if later on in my life, serious critics too serious critics, have learnedly enunciated after having dissected some of my novels the fact that these novels emanated from the pen of a man who had not even the elements of the humanities it costs me nothing to admit that these gentlemen are quite in the right. I humbly confess that I shall never translate Horace as Jules Jamin did or Homer like Madame Dacier I shan't even try to do so As to my style if people have often found it slovenly I can only say that having in most of my tales taken my characters from among the lower classes of society, I should have thought it clumsy on my part—to say the least of it—to make them speak like Academicians and finally as concerning the faults of grammar which I am accused of I will remark that having heard hundreds of times over that even the greatest writers sin in this respect I don't think it at all surprising that I who am only a popular novelist should have sometimes deserved this reproach

To conclude, because I am not writing in defence of my books here, which would bore you as much as it would bore me, but my souvenirs, I will say one last word. Such as I am, as a writer, I have been accepted, I have been read, I am still very much read, and I fancy that I shall be read for a long time to come, were it only by people anxious to read of a period already so far behind us and so different from that in which we are now living and by people who want to laugh. To laugh! This is a kind of pleasure which to my thinking is not very liberally afforded by the novels which are published to-day.

Well, such as I am, and without bearing the least grudge—I swear it—against those elegant people who have called me “the cook’s novelist” (which in view of the number of editions and translations of my books would prove that there are terribly many cooks in the world), such as I am, I say, I am satisfied with myself and with the rest, and only hope that my colleagues may be able to say the same, when they reach my age. So you see that my seventy-six years have not spoiled my temper.

If I worked badly as M Bedel’s pupil, I made up for it by working splendidly as the pupil of M Mengal. Who was M Mengal? He was my music-master. My stepfather was very intimate with M Mengal, first cornet-player at the Théâtre Feydeau, and at the same time a talented violinist, and had begged him to give me some violin lessons, as

a friend Had I had no talent for music M Mengal would no doubt have tired very soon of teaching me as a friend that is for nothing As it was I was very fond of music and learned easily My rapid progress rewarded M Mengal's care and labour I had the satisfaction of rewarding him in a more substantial manner by giving him the *libretti* of two comic operas to set to music These were *Une Nuit au chateau* and *les Infidèles* both of which were successfully performed

So I learned the violin and when I was fifteen I could play it well enough to take part in a quatuor but, what I liked best of all was to play for others to dance I had a friend of my own age a lad called Lepere who played the flute and at least once a week, for three or four years Lepere and I formed an orchestra to the delight of innumerable *sorrees dansantes* Lepere used to play out of tune The good fellow's passion for the flute was an unhappy one for his audiences But as he played loud and long people were not too critical We were received with open arms wherever we went and laden with compliments cakes and glasses of punch.

One evening however at the house of one of the colleagues of M Gaigneau a clerk in the Revenue Office like my stepfather the cakes were so hard the punch so weak and the compliments so few that towards midnight drawing Lepere aside I said to him

It's very dull here I'm off will you come with

me?"

"Gad, if you go, I am not going to stay here all alone"

Lepère made a face. He did not like to give his flute a rest so early in the evening. But, without my violin, his flute was nothing but a rose-tree without its support, an ivy-plant with no tree to cling to, and so his flute followed my violin.

We left the house where our talents had been so meanly requited, and were walking towards the Rue du Temple, at the corner of the boulevard, opposite the Jardins de Paphos where I was then living with my mother and stepfather, and which was near to the house where my friend lived. It was in the autumn, the autumn of 1810, the night was bright and warm, and as I walked along, with my violin-case in my hand, over the pavement of the dark and deserted town, I tried to cheer Lepère with my conversation and to bring a smile to his lips.

Suddenly, as we were walking down a small street, we heard the sounds of a piano, of dancing feet and of peals of laughter. We looked up and saw, on the fifth floor, two windows lighted up and wide open, and through these windows reflected on the house opposite the shadows of people who were dancing like wild men. We halted.

"That's something like it," I said. "They seem to be enjoying themselves here at any rate."

"Yes," said Lepère with a sigh. "They're dancing one of the quadrilles which we play the best

of any *The Caliph of Bagdad* our triumph

But what an orchestra You can't call it a piano
it's a kettle

I've an idea, Lepere?

Well what is it?

Supposing we accompany the kettle.

What? Here in the street? Are you mad We
should get ourselves arrested by the patrol

Bah! the patrol is a big way off

I had got my violin already fixed under my chin
Lepere did not resist, the flute rose to his mouth
one two three Off we go joining with the piano
in *The Caliph of Bagdad* quadrille It was not in
the same key, but we did not mind about that At
the sound of our music as melodious as it was un
expected the dancers stop dancing and come hurry
ing to the windows They applaud and call to us

Won't you come up? Do come up?

Shall we go up? I say to Lepere

What to people we don't know?

What of that They are people who dance It
is certain that they are not cowards!

I do not know who these people were I have
never known but what I do know is that that night
was one of the pleasantest I ever spent in my life
For Lepere and I went up to the ball on the fifth
floor Even if we had not wanted to go up we
should have been forced to do so as a band of strong
young fellows about half a dozen of them came pel

ting down the stairs to fetch us and would have carried us up by main force We went up and played our prettiest quadrilles, to the satisfaction of all, and danced ourselves, and when we had danced, we supped, at three o'clock in the morning There was a supper, a supper with nothing *recherché* about it As far as I can remember, the *pâtes de résistance* consisted of a cold leg of mutton and a small ham But at sixteen a ham and a leg of mutton are worth a truffled turkey at fifty And then, all these people, petty clerks, I fancy, with a mixture of workmen, were all so good-humoured and bright There were such hearty faces amongst the men and such pretty ones amongst the women

Well, it was only at five o'clock, after a last quadrille, the stirrup-cup quadrille, that the party broke up, and Lepère and I could get away We were overwhelmed with thanks, our arms ached from shaking hands so often, and we were forced to give our solemn promise, when we left, that we would come to the next ball

But, as I have said, I never knew who these people were, nor what the house was where I had played for others to dance, had danced myself and supped And Lepère knew as little about it as I When the master of the house invited us to come to his next ball, he forgot to ask us our names or to give us his Perhaps it was because we were all rather excited when we parted, for the mutton and the ham had been washed down with copious draughts How-

ever that may be as we did not even remember the name of the street where the ball had been given it will be easily understood that it was difficult to pay our host another visit or even a polite call

Was that to be regretted? Who knows? On the first occasion, we liked these people whom we did not know and they liked us. Perhaps if we had gone again we might have bored ourselves perhaps our hosts might have come to blows with us. We never saw our friends of one night again. It was all the better so. There are many such pleasures which are agreeable only when taken once and without reflection.

CHAPTER III

I lose my professor — A child's library — Parisian Theatres between 1802 and 1805 — Napoleon I did not understand Parisian humour — Mademoiselle Montansier — A meeting in 1812 — Paris the animal painter — An episode during the famine — About a marriage which Mdlle Montansier was on the point of contracting — Barras — General Bonaparte — The origin of the Théâtre du Palais Royal — A slight grudge against the First Empire — I wish to see the Emperor at close quarters — Birth of the King of Rome — A new violinist is introduced into the Court of the Tuilleries — My first book — How I became a novelist — '*My Wife's Child*' — Clerk to a banker, and in apprenticeship as a Great Man — The first page of a first chapter — Who Zoe was — M Theodore — Writing consoles for all

M Bedel having left Paris, towards the middle of the year 1808, to go to Auvergne, on family business, my studies were perforce interrupted. I was to have resumed them on his return, but as he never returned, for reasons of *force majeure*, that is to say, because he died of inflammation of the lungs at Clermont Ferrand, my mother declared that I was sufficiently advanced to be able to study without a master.

And I really think, that I worked better when left

to myself

I had formed a small library out of my weekly pocket money and in this library Molière had the place of honour Oh Molière! I never wearied of reading him I knew him all by heart I also liked Racine and especially *Les Plaideurs* I had already formed a preference for the Muse of Comedy *Cuique suum*, you know And as I read this side splitting play over and over again I used to think as many must have thought before me, that it was astonishing that having shown himself in *Les Plaideurs* such a master of Comedy Racine should have persisted in devoting himself to tragedy Certainly *Phèdre* and *Britannicus* are splendid plays but what a pity it is that their author never wrote a companion piece to *Les Plaideurs* Another book which also delighted me immensely —perhaps I shall surprise you in saying so—was Plutarch's *Lives* Can you imagine Paul de Kock reading Plutarch For what purpose? In what way did it help him? Well and were it only that it taught me that supposing he could return to day to this earth he would have the greatest difficulty in finding material for a thirteenth volume of his *Lives* it cannot be said that I wasted my time in reading him

In the afternoon from noon till five o'clock I worked at my translations and prose compositions which were corrected by M Gaigneau when he had the time to do so In the morning I practised the violin and after dinner, except when I went to a

party or to the theatre, I used to read my favourite authors

I have said that my mother was very fond of the theatre. We often went there, only my mother and I, for my stepfather was obliged—so he told us—three times a week to go back to his office in the evenings. My mother liked the play as a play, and had no special preference for any particular style of dramatic entertainment. I make a mistake. She cared but little for the Opera and preferred the Opéra Comique. But seats at the Opéra Comique were expensive, and so we used generally to patronize the theatres where melodramas and vaudevilles were played. I can remember very well that, as a child, I saw, from 1802 to 1805, the first performances of Caigniez's *Jugement de Salomon* at the Ambigu Comique, Cuvier and Hapde's *l'Enfant prodigue* at the Porte-Saint-Martin, Ribié and Hapde's *la Lampe merveilleuse* and Martainville's *Roderic et Cunégonde* at the Gaîté, Desaugier's *le Quartier d'hiver ou les Métamorphoses* at the Jeunes Artistes, Madame Montenclos's *Robert-le-Bossu ou les Trois Sœurs* at the Variétés Amusantes, *les Quatre fils Aymon et la Fille Hussard*, pantomimes with equestrian feats, at the Brothers Franconi's Circus in the Rue Mont-Thabor, and *Le Demoisel et la Bergerette ou la Femme Vindictive*, at the Cité Theatre.

As far as I can remember, this Cité theatre which was just opposite the Palais de Justice, was a horrible

place small dark dirty and smoky So that when in 1807 this theatre together with seven or eight more was suppressed by the Emperor's orders it was but little regretted All the same I can't help wondering why Napoleon who hesitated so little to sacrifice his subjects to his glory should have felt it necessary to reduce their pleasures What harm was there that Paris should have numerous theatres since in spite of the constant diminution of the population—a consequence of the continual wars—they were always crowded But Napoleon I was well and truly the uncle of Napoleon III I say this without bitterness He was not a Parisian in his turn of mind

The first, by caprice wiped out a dozen theatres by a stroke of the pen the second under pretence of beautifying the capital sent half a dozen theatres packing to set themselves up again where they could 'You are a goldsmith M Josse will be said to me I admit it Both as a spectator and as an author I sigh as I think of my dear *Boulevard du Crime* such as I knew it so many years with all its theatres side by side, with their doors open I am a goldsmith yes but M Haussmann must be an Alsatian

It was at this Cite theatre that I had the good fortune to shudder for the first time at the yells of *Tautin* the celebrated traitor I used to split my sides with laughing over Brunet and Tiercelin at the Varietes Amusantes The Vanetes Amusantes used

also to be called The Variétés-Montansier This theatre had been built on the site of the Beaujolais puppet-show by Mademoiselle Montansier out of her own pocket, but was sent packing in 1806, because people used to enjoy the fun there so much that the Comédie-Française suffered from the competition Driven out in this way, Mdlle Montansier built a new theatre out of what remained of a once considerable fortune, on a site which was in the neighbourhood of the old theatre She gave her name to this theatre At first, like the old Théâtre de Beaujolais, it was only licensed for wooden actors The Variétés-Montansier is the theatre known to-day as the Théâtre du Palais-Royal Under the second Republic, as the word 'royal' shocked people's ears, the theatre was called by its original name That however only lasted a very short time People soon got tired of making themselves ridiculous for so little

I never made Mademoiselle Montansier's acquaintance, but I often saw her in my youth and especially the first time I met her, she produced a great impression on me That was in 1812 I was walking in the galleries of the Palais-Royal, formerly known as the Palais du Tribunat, with a painter, a friend of mine, called Pâris, who died recently, poor and forgotten He might have been one of our most famous animal-painters, if he had only known how to push himself forward Pâris was seven years my senior He combined the heartiest good humour

with much native wit He was moreover a keen observer and never forgot anything that he had seen or heard and could tell it in the most amusing way I remember one of his anecdotes about the famine in 1795 which is worth repeating

Paris was the fifth child of a small stationer in the Rue Saint Denis It is difficult for poor people to feed five children two daughters and three sons in a time of famine and the table was not laid every day at that stationer's house in March and April 1795 the less so because as an additional misfortune his wife was ill in bed which prevented the unhappy man from going every day as was the custom at that delightful period to wait for hours outside a baker's shop for his rations of bread.

Under these circumstances one of old Paris's daughters the youngest Marthe a girl of thirteen sacrificed herself for the common good As to the elder sister she would not have ventured into the crowd for her weight in cakes. Marthe was not afraid and braving the fatigue of a long wait in the street and what was worse the insults and violence of the mob used to accomplish her task and return home triumphantly with her loaf under her arm Now whilst waiting her turn in the line she had noticed that, by special favour which showed that the people of Paris in spite of the pangs of hunger had some good feeling left women who were in an interesting condition were allowed to pass first into the bakers shop What does the young lady do

the next day? She takes a pillow and, putting it to a use which can be guessed, goes to her father for the money for the bread. The father is surprised at her extraordinary size and asks her what it means. Martha explains her plan with the greatest coolness. "Since women in an interesting condition go in first by favour, I have put myself in an interesting condition. It's simple enough." And simple enough it was, to be sure, but, none the less, the stationer refused to allow her to carry out her plan, although he laughed till the tears came into his eyes, at the girl's stratagem, in ingenuously dishonouring herself, so as to get the family bread quicker.

"The dear little woman," said Paris, "could not understand why her father forced her to remove her pillow. 'But I should save at least two hours, like this, Papa,' she kept repeating. 'let me go like this I shall get back so much sooner to look after Mamma?'"

The mother herself had to speak quite angrily to Miss Martha before she would consent to become slim again. Three years later, when she was sixteen years old, the girl used to blush up to the roots of her hair when she heard this story. There was no need for her blush. The story was all to the credit of her childish simplicity and goodness of heart. There are many things in the book called *Morality in Action* which outwardly perhaps are more chaste, but in their core are not more moral than this act of hers.

But all this is taking me far away from my first meeting in 1812 with Mademoiselle Montansier Let me get back to it.

I was walking in the Palais Royal as I have already told you with Paris when there passed in front of us a little old woman so old so decrepit, so wrinkled so shrivelled and into the bargain so grotesquely accoutred — a canary-coloured dress, buskin boots a very loud cashmere shawl over her shoulders and a kind of turban on her head—that at first sight I seemed to see the fairy Carabosse although that fairy is reputed the most wicked of all fairies whilst this little old lady looked mild and kind

'Don't you know that lady?' said Paris

'No who is it?'

'Mademoiselle Montansier'

'You don't say so The theatre manageress?'

'Yes she has been manageress of a great number of theatres in turn beginning with the theatre at Versailles, to which she was appointed by Queen Marie Antoinette Oh! she has made millions of money in the business So Barras had planned that a certain general in whom he took an interest should marry Mademoiselle Montansier'

'Who was that general?'

Paris bent forward and whispered in my ear It was not safe to speak too loud in a public place in Paris under M. Fouché's police.

'That general's name was Bonaparte'

I burst out laughing

"What nonsense! Napoleon marrying la Montansier!"

"Hush! You mustn't shout out things like that. It is fair to say that the general did not rise to the bait, golden as it was. But people say that Barras' plan was very favourably entertained by Montansier, in spite of her sixty summers. The little chap Bonaparte had quite stolen her heart. Well, as you know, this marriage never came off. Bonaparte made a better match. He did not marry a millionaire, he married France."

Pâris spoke these last words in his ordinary tone of voice. He no longer minded being overheard by a *mouchard*.

He continued:

"As to la Montansier, who had already buried one husband, it is affirmed that three years ago she married a fellow called Forioso, a rope dancer, who is busy spending what remains of her millions. She lives just opposite, there on the second floor, under the arcades of the Café de Chartres, which used to belong to her. And, as, after all, she has never done any harm, but, on the contrary, has done a good deal of good, let us hope that, in spite of Forioso, when she dies, it will be on a featherbed, and not on a heap of straw in a gutter."

Pâris's wish was fulfilled. La Montansier was poor, but not destitute when she died, towards 1820,

in her apartment in the Palais Royal.

I blamed Napoleon above for his abuse of authority in regard to the pleasures of the Parisians. I did not mean thereby to imply that I do not admit that he was a man of genius. This is my opinion and I force nobody to share it, at a time when out of opposition to the nephew people are trying to prove that the uncle, that great legislator that glorious captain who turned two thirds of Europe into French provinces was nothing but a sort of bandit and idiot combined whose memory ought to be buried in mud. Those who write such things are dangerous lunatics and those who listen to them and hawk them round are pitiful simpletons. Is the future of which these gentlemen so fondly dream so brilliant that they dare thus to spit upon the past?

But I really think that forgetting the principles of my whole lifetime both as a writer and a man I have allowed myself to be led away to talk politics. I am being influenced by bad examples. One hears nothing but politics now a days on every side. It is enough to make one idiotic. There had been a respite from this for some fifteen years past but now it has broken out again. So much the worse say I.

On the other hand I am not writing a novel but my souvenirs and so I may be allowed occasionally to say what I think of what I have seen and of what I see.

To return to Napoleon I I admit that I bore him a slight grudge, first because in 1807 he suppressed a number of innocent little theatres, where I used to amuse myself, and secondly because in 1813 my step-father was forced, by his laws, to pay for two substitutes for the army for me, one after the other The first substitute happened to get himself killed at Lutzen, and I was forced to provide another, as the authorities said that that did not count Fortunately for me M Gaigneau had received a small legacy that year, but for which, for want of money, I should have been forced to serve This would not have suited me at all, for Bellona's laurels were by no means my ideal

But I can pride myself on one thing with reference to the first Emperor of the French, and the same applies to the various sovereigns who succeeded him, that I did not give him the slightest ass's kick after he fell, any more than I wrote the smallest poem in his praise whilst he was reigning At the same time, in 1811, some time before I became liable to the conscription, and accordingly felt a bit sore—with the prospect of having to don a uniform—against the man who, on account of his furious consumption of human flesh, used to be called the Ogre in not a few houses, I got a violent longing to see Napoleon at close quarters, at the closest quarters possible

The year 1811 was, according to history, one of the most glorious and prosperous of Napoleon's

reign France was at that time at peace with almost all the powers the Emperor who for reasons of State, had separated himself the year before from his good Josephine to marry Marie Louise had then paternal reasons for congratulating himself on this *coup d'Etat* A son had been born to him Everything was rose-coloured in the viviest of possible empires Who could have thought then that Napoleon II would not succeed to Napoleon I?

Paris was radiantly happy for months after the birth of the King of Rome It was radiantly happy chiefly because it saw in this child a pledge of peace Now patriotic joy is contagious, and so it happened that I who till then had never had any wish to look face to face at the sun, came to have no dearer wish than to see Napoleon

I told Mengel my professor, of this and one evening in the month of July he said to me

'You wish to see the Emperor I can enable you to do so There is to be a concert the day after tomorrow at the Tuileries in the Cour de l'Horloge I am going to this concert and I will take you with me'

'With you? But what right have I to go?'

'As a violinist, of course But as you can't play the pieces which are going to be performed you will only pretend to play The bandmaster is a friend of mine and as I have told him what is up, he won't say anything to you'

It was on the 7th or 8th of July 1811 Why was

a concert given at the Tuileries on that day? I do not remember. Perhaps it was to celebrate Marie-Louise's convalescence—she had been kept to her bed for a long time after her confinement,—or perhaps the little King of Rome had cut his first tooth. Be that as it may, I was able to glut my eyes on the Emperor and the Empress—who came out on the balcony at her husband's side—whilst pretending to scrape my violin. The imperial couple were both in gala dress. Behind them was a crowd of princes, marshals and great ladies glittering with gold and diamonds. Marie-Louise looked handsome, but Napoleon seemed to me fat, yellow, puffy, with his head wedged in between his shoulders. He did not look the hero I had expected to see. I had come to look at a demigod and saw a fat man. He withdrew at the end of the concert, after making a gesture of thanks, of which I took my share. Well, after all, if I had played nothing, I was not paid either. I had neglected my business to get a peep at him, and that was well worth an act of courtesy on his part.

It was in this same year, 1811, that I wrote my first novel, *My Wife's Child*, that luckless child which I had such difficulty in starting in the world—where, I must add, he never distinguished himself. But if I am to tell this episode properly, I must go back three years.

It was six months after M. Bedel's departure and death. As decided by my mother, I was pursuing

my studies as best I could alone

One evening I was at the house of one of our friends whom I was visiting with my parents. After a game of *reversi*, I had played a piece on the violin to the satisfaction of all—a hen—a tall meagre angular man—whom I remember as if he stood before me—said to M^{me} Gaigneau after greatly complimenting me on my talent:

So you intend to bring up this young man as a musician? You want to make an artist of him?

Oh only as an amateur said my mother. My husband and I are not rich enough to wait till my son can earn money as a composer and I don't want him to give lessons or to play in the theatres.

Ah ah said the tall gentleman. If that is so I don't see what is to prevent your son Madame from employing his time more profitably than in scraping the cat gut strings. How old are you my friend?

I shall soon be fifteen I said

Very well. Now we are just looking out for our business for young clerks of good education whom we could trust.

And what is your business, please? asked my mother.

Madame I am head cashier at Messrs Scherer & Finguierlin the bankers. My name is Mathieu Delavarde, at your service.

My stepfather made a slight grimace. It struck him that the post would hardly suit me. He had

guessed my inclinations, poor, dear man But his grimace sealed my fate, in a manner opposed to its meaning My mother saw it, and turning graciously to M Mathieu Delavarde said with a smile

"Sir, my husband and I both thank you infinitely for your kind offer, both for my son and for ourselves, and we will take it into immediate consideration Should we accept it, what should we have to do, sir?"

"Nothing, but to bring Master Paul to the office one morning, that's all"

"Thank you, sir"

I am sorry to say it, for I have always loved the fair sex and shall, I hope, love it as long as I live, finding women's society far more agreeable, for every possible reason, than that of men , but women have a terrible defect, contradictoriness Contradictoriness is their essence They are so created Look at Eve Adam was afraid of touching the apple, Eve would taste it at all costs Had my father accepted M Delavarde's offer at the outset, I am quite sure that my mother would have rejected it with all her vigour, but as he appeared to think little of it, she jumped at it

When we got home that evening, she said to me

"You have heard what was said, my boy, by that gentleman, who is head-cashier in the bank of Sché-rer and Finguérin It rests with you whether you enter this office or not What do you say about it?"

Mon Dieu mamma all I can say is that if you wish me to do so, I will go into this office

'Yes certainly I wish it, my boy You have reached an age when you ought to be seriously at work Theres a fine career in a bank and a man doesn't lower himself by going into a business of that sort Look at your father'

M Gaigneau shook his head

M de Kock he said, was a banker That is very different from being a bank clerk

And what of that sir? What is to prevent my son becoming a banker, one day like his father?

'What is to prevent him? What is to ?'

Of course I know that it is not with the funds with which you will provide him that he will be able to set up in business Well he will do without you sir, and that will make little difference to him for he has long accustomed himself not to count on you He is intelligent and honest, he will work hard and he will get on And then at least when I am an old woman, thanks to my son I shant be forced to run after a twenty franc piece as I now am at least six days out of every seven So you will be good enough sir to take my son to morrow morning to M Delavardes office

'Very well very well, as you please my dear

Bank clerk! I was doomed to rows of figures from morning till evening Figures which to my way of thinking are the most dismal things in the world Have you not noticed that men who have to

do with figures, all seem, more or less, to be haunted, out of their business hours, by a dream, like Père Sournois in *Les Petites Danaïdes*. No, there is no laughing in casting up an addition. So much and so much make so much. It must come out so much, if it does not, it is you who are to blame. Your totals don't agree with the accounts, your balance-sheet is not correct. Hunt, hunt, hunt up your mistake and don't stop till you find it.

I spent five years with Messrs Schérer and Finguérin, from October 1808 till December 1813. And it would seem that my employers were not too dissatisfied with me, seeing that when I left them I was earning eight pounds a month, which was a very good salary at that time. Does that mean that I was an excellent employé? No. My head was too full of other things. But although I had no taste for my work, I discharged my duties with care and punctuality. I prided myself on never incurring any reproach. Besides, I was pleased to earn some money which enabled me gradually to add to my library, to try on clothes which pleased me, to go in the evenings to the theatre, and on Sundays to go for excursions with friends male—and female.

For, towards 1811, I began to have female friends, the sort of friends one has at eighteen, friends with whom one is far more disposed to exchange kisses than philosophical remarks. And this will not, I suppose, surprise you, for you did not expect me to tell you that I waited till I was of age before falling

in love As a matter of fact it was one of my first love affairs which prompted me to write my first novel for the simple reason that *she* adored novels She was a grisette who worked at artificial flowers in the Rue Saint Martin Seventeen. Pretty? Well no piquant rather with her tilted nose and eyes which looked as if they had been bored with a gumlet But so gay so fond of laughing that the only books she cared for were books which made her laugh which shows that she had very good taste On Sundays when the weather was bad and we could not go out to the St Gervais meadows or to the wood at Romainville we used to shut ourselves up all day in her little room and read Pigault Le brun

One day however Zoe was forced to go on a journey a long journey One of her aunts was ill at Coulommiers and wanted her attendance How long was she going to be absent? A month or six weeks Oh! but were it to be a year her heart would be mine and mine would be hers We swore in on a copy of *Monsieur Botte*

What can be done whilst awaiting the return of a sweetheart to whom one has vowed fidelity? Previous to her departure I had been tempted on five or six different occasions after reading some successful book to write a small *chef d'œuvre* myself

I had even written out the scenario of a book with this object in view It was a scenario of thirty

lines, I have never made them longer than that Well, the opportunity was a good one I was forced to keep quiet for a whole month, and would employ this month over a work which would win me Zoë's congratulations on her return I had three or four quires of good paper, I chose the whitest, the smoothest, I trimmed six quills in advance and—and forward!—

Chapter I

Journeys, accidents, adventures

We shall never reach Strasburg this evening, Mullern Tell the postboy to whip up these accursed horses —I have told him at least twenty times during the last hour to do so, Colonel, and he answered me that he could not go any faster without breaking all our three necks — Henry will have left Strasburg by the time we get there. —Well, then Colonel, we will continue the pursuit —And perhaps we shan't get up to him in time to prevent the catastrophe which I dread —If that happens, Colonel, you cannot blame yourself, for, upon my soul, we have done nothing the last six weeks but travel posthaste, day and night, from Framberg to Strasburg, from Strasburg to Paris, from Paris to Framberg, my trowsers are sticking to my thighs, so at the next inn everybody will see the shape of my legs, Colonel —If, at least we had accomplished the object of this journey —Ah, if I could have a good bottle of wine to help me to wake up my limbs But nothing, nothing, not even a

wretched glass of the commonest wine to quench the thirst which is consuming me Ah Colonel if it wasn't you would I thus patiently endure such tortures?—Do you regret having followed me Mullern? —I Colonel I would follow you to the end of the world but I do object to going without food and drink.

Here the conversation was interrupted by a violent crash. The axle of the post chaise was broken and a minute later Colonel Framberg and his travelling companion were flung out into the ditch by the side of the road. It was all the postboy's fault. He was driving so fast that he had not noticed this ditch.

Well there is no nonsense about that opening at any rate. It is the opening of *My Wife's Child* if you please. There is no long winded introduction to the tale it begins with a situation at once. A colonel and his faithful hussar the good Mullern who discuss their business as they drive along in a post chaise the axle tree which breaks the travellers who roll into the ditch at no distance of course from a house where they are received with open arms and where of course they come in for all kinds of adventures. It was in this wise that one began a novel sixty years ago. One took the bull by the horns. Now a days the bull only appears in the second or third chapter. Each age has its style as for me I still prefer the fashion of 1811.

In one month, I had written the two volumes of *My Wife's Child*. I made it two volumes, because that would cost less to print than a book of three volumes, and so would tempt a publisher more readily. But before taking *My Wife's Child* to a publisher, I could not resist the pleasure of showing the manuscript to my mother and stepfather and of saying to them "It is I who have written this. And if you would like me to read you a few chapters, I will do so with the greatest pleasure."

And then there was Zoé who would soon be back. Her aunt must be either dead or cured. What a thing this love for glory is! I had been so taken up during a whole month with my novel, so absorbed, night after night, that I had barely found time to go twice or thrice to ask the porter at her house if he had any news of my sweetheart. Oh! how proud my little Zoé would be of me, when she heard that I too was an author.

Alas—and this was the first of the series of disappointments and worries that came to me over *My Wife's Child*—my mother, when I offered to read her a work which I had written all by myself, which had all come out of my head, my mother answered "Bah, your novel must be something fine. Some rhapsody. It would be much better for you to try and get some promotion in your office, than to write rubbish."

My stepfather was more amiable. He took my manuscript and promised to have a look at it, in the

evening before going to bed But he was always so tired on going to bed poor dear man He had laid *My Wife's Child* on the table by his bedside and left it there without touching it for a whole week The dust began to cover it with a yellow shroud So I took my manuscript away My stepfather never noticed that I had done so

As to Zoe—alas that was the unkindest blow of all After an absence of six weeks Zoé came back from Coulommiers Her aunt was well again but Zoe had made the acquaintance at her aunt's house down there of a cousin a fine young fellow of twenty five, who being anxious to see the metropolis had thought it a good plan to save hotel expenses by putting up at his cousin's house

Now Zoë's house consisted of one room only So there was no misapprehension possible Theodore (that was the cousin's name) won't be staying in Paris long ' she said Wait until he's gone and then we will see each other again You know one's first duty is to one's relations

The jade!—I had *My Wife's Child* in my pocket I had brought it for her I did not read her a single line of it

Bah since my family and my sweetheart refused to encourage my first steps in literature I would do without the encouragements of family and sweet heart My book would be printed it would be very successful the newspapers would speak of it the lending libraries would fight for it and my revenge

should be to carry copies of *My Wife's Child* to an indifferent mother and to a jilting mistress, and to say to the one "You had no faith in me" and to the other "You were faithless But I do not care For now, in spite of you, I have a name I am a celebrated novelist "

CHAPTER IV

Travels in search of a Publisher — Who M Fages was — A word about Bezou — I tackle Pollet the bookeller — He said Business is bad — Another disappointment — Excellent M Quoy's terror — What sort of a lunch one got for a louis in 1811 — *Les Vendanges de Bourgogne* — Dorvaly an author of the good old days — A prince *de la main gauche* — How a man of wit died in the old days — The outspokenness of the ancients the prudishness of modern people — Two years of pleasure and heedlessness — How I behaved at twenty — Consequences of a soirée at the Tivoli — The wife of a naval officer — A night of love and fear — You won't catch me there again — A woman's glance four years later

The first step is taken unconsciously This saying is absolutely true about one's first visit to a publisher the second visit is the formidable matter I felt so sure that the man whom I should ask to publish my book would reply at once Why of course with pleasure So so you have written a novel Let me have it Two volumes, you know ~~c~~ly two volumes would not cost very much to print And I was not asking any royalties I did not mean to speak about royalties until the publication of my second book For of course I couldn't

be expected to go on enriching a publisher all my lifetime without wanting a little for myself also But my first book, oh ! my first book should be his for nothing Should he sell ten thousand copies—and why shouldn't he?—so much the better for him

Oh, day-dreams of the budding author The name of the publisher to whom I had determined to confide the birth of *My Wife's Child*, was Fages He lived on the boulevard Saint-Martin, opposite the Rue de Lancry. He published a great many theatrical pieces and I had bought them all and we had thus struck up an acquaintance I never missed going to see M Fages on my way home from my office in the evening We used to talk about literary matters

It was with an almost solemn air that that evening, I marched into his shop, with my manuscript under my arm

"Ah, Monsieur de Kock And how are you this evening?"

"Very well, Monsieur Fages And if you can spare the time, I should be glad of a word with you in private"

"All right, all right Madame Fages, I say, Madame Fages, be good enough to look after the shop for about five minutes whilst I talk with M de Kock "

Madame Fages, a tall woman—as tall as her husband was short, very amiable also and so fond of smiling—too fond of smiling indeed, as she had only two teeth, one on the right and one on the left, which rather marred the beauty of her smile, Ma-

dame Fages I say, had taken her seat behind the counter and I was with M Fages in the backshop

Now what can I do for you my dear Monsieur de Koch?

This is the matter I have written a novel, M Fages

Oh indeed?

A novel in two volumes. It is very bright, and very amusing in the style of Pigault Lebrun *My Wife's Child*. Not a bad title, eh?

No the title is droll

That's what I think Well here's my novel for you M Fages

For me? What do you want me to do with it?

Why to publish it of course

To publish it. Oh that's quite out of my line Monsieur de Koch. I publish plays and I am not at all sure that the speculation is a good one. I am not a rich man and I can't pay eight or twelve pounds for a piece like Barba of the Palais Royal.

I don't ask for any royalties. We can talk about than when you publish my second book, if my first has sold well

Oh no publisher ever pays anything for a first book so it's not a question of royalties

Then what prevents you—?

Why! the cost of printing it of course and the cost of the paper. It costs a jolly sight more to get out a novel than a play

Nonsense Two small volumes Such small vol

umes ”

“If they’re so small, they can’t be volumes”

“Oh, they’re big enough for What I mean to
say is You see ”

“Very sorry, M de Kock, but I’m not your man”

“But won’t you read my *Child* before refusing it
altogether?”

“No I don’t doubt that your *Child* is, as you say,
very amusing and very bright, but, as I have said
before, I have made it a rule not to publish novels
You’re by no means the first author who has asked
me to do so”

“Then you reject them—like this—without even
reading them Supposing somebody brought you a
masterpiece to-morrow, a *Nouvelle Héloïse*, a *Ma-
non Lescaut*? ”

“I should reject it all right Mon Dieu, yes What
would you have one do? Needs must, when one is
poor Write plays, melodramas, vaudevilles, and
get them acted and I shall only be too happy to print
them But novels—But you must excuse me, my
dear M de Kock, I think I hear my wife calling me
When she’s alone in the shop, my wife, she loses her
head”

“Your servant, Monsieur Fages”

“Yours to command, Monsieur de Kock”

“A last word. As you seem to have made up your
mind not to publish novels, I won’t insist, but you
might be able to advise me What other publisher
do you think I ought to see? Who would be most

likely—

Go and see Barba.'

Oh, Barba is Pigault Lebrun's publisher I should never dare to go to him

Humph True If your book is in Pigault's style Barba would not care for it Well go and see Dentu or Pigoreau Stay You won't lose anything by trying Go to the Rue du Temple and see a man called Pollet, who has just set up in business. I hear that he means to publish novels as well as plays

Pollet Rue du Temple?

Yes opposite the Rue Chapon

Thanks and *au revoir*

I shook hands with Fages as usual on leaving him but without warmth What an ass the fellow is! On the pretence that he only publishes vaudevilles and melodramas he admits that if even the most charming novel was offered to him he would refuse to read it. And then he complains that he doesn't get rich Ah when I write for the stage he needn't expect to get any of my plays to print

And as a matter of fact when later I wrote plays I did not let Fages have them I bore him a grudge He noticed this and spoke of it to his successor Bezou a friend of Barba's with whom I afterwards arranged for the publication of several of my vaudevilles Bezou I may mention was a very amiable man and I used to ask him to dinner One had to

take one's time, when dining with him He had lost his teeth when he was a young man, and, at dinner, when a slice of beef, or of mutton was placed before him, he used to take out his watch and lay it on the table and say "It will take me half-an-hour, you know, to get through this, and I mustn't be expected to talk, either" Barba, whose jokes were not always in the best taste, used to say "You made a bad bargain, Bezou, in buying Fages' business" "Why so?" "Why, because you ought to have bargained, in the agreement, for his wife's two teeth, over and above the shop Supposing each tooth had saved you five minutes at dinner, just think what a lot of time you would have saved"

But to come back to *My Wife's Child*, which with full speed I carried to M Pollet, bookseller in the Rue du Temple, the very same evening, after leaving M Fages But I walked no longer with head erect A first defeat had robbed me of my courage and left me timid, frightened, stammering

Yes, it was quite true that M Pollet intended to publish novels—one fine day He hadn't quite made up his mind, yet. Business was so bad (I have never heard tradesmen say anything else and I can't help wondering how business can have survived at all, seeing how bad it has been ever since I can remember) However, if I liked to leave my manuscript, perhaps, when he had read it—

The words were not out of M Pollet's mouth before the manuscript had passed from my pocket into

his hands

And when shall I come back to hear—"

In a week '

'Very well To days Tuesday I'll come to
morrow week '

All right.

That was the man for my money I thought.
He reads at least Not like M Fages

How long those days of waiting seemed to me
to be sure. Would he print it? Would he reject it?
These two questions haunted me even in my dreams,
prevented me from eating and working and plunged
me alternately into depths of despair or raised me to
the highest heights of joy Would he print it?
Would he not print it?

He did *not* print it

It's not bad' he told me but it's not good either
It's a feeble imitation of Pigault Lebrun Some
thing original—something even moderately original
would be better for us both Imitations of Pigault
are as common as ditchwater Take more care about
your style which is weak think out your plots and
study your characters, and we may yet do business
together

I never did business with M Pollet any more
than with M Fages although ten years later he be
gan to publish novels He was the first publisher
of Balzac who was then writing under the names of
Horace de Saint Aubin Lord Rhone de Villergle
and of Victor Ducange I never approached him

again, not because I was offended with him for the opinion he had passed on my first book, an opinion with which later I fully agreed, but because I knew that he was connected with a number of authors and thought he had no room for me

As to my *Child*, I think I have told you enough of its bad reception at the hands of the publishers, which was followed by a still worse reception at the hands of the public—when it was at last printed, at my expense I don't exaggerate when I say that I visited from fifteen to twenty different publishers I even went and offered it to the lending-libraries There was a man called Quoy who kept a reading-room and lending-library on the Boulevard Saint-Martin, near the theatre of that name He had shown some interest in me, so, one day, in a fit of rage, I put *My Wife's Child* to Quoy's throat.

"But I am not a publisher"

"You shall publish this Publish *My Wife's Child* or die the death"

"So be it Kill me I am ready to die"

Quoy fell at my feet—For a moment my head reeled—My manuscript, hanging over his head, menaced him

Fortunately at that very moment, a lady entered the shop

"*The Mysteries of Udolpho*, sir, if you please"

Ann Radcliffe had saved Quoy's life I fled and still trembling at the thought of the crime I had so nearly committed, no sooner had I reached my

room than I flung my *Child* into a cupboard, and exclaimed—

Go then pariah Since none will take thee in
go sleep in darkness and in dust.

It slept there two years I am sorry it did not
sleep there for ever

In the autumn of this year 1811, so fatal to my literary hopes, I met by chance a man whose name—almost entirely forgotten to day—was as famous as that of the most celebrated dramatic writers during the last twenty years of the eighteenth century

I was dressing one Sunday morning when Puis the painter of whom I have already spoken—I had recently made his acquaintance—came into my room He was accompanied by another young man called Maricot a miniature painter who later became one of my most intimate friends

They had come to take me out to lunch The day before—joyous surprise—Maricot had sold a portrait and had got twenty francs more for it than he had expected to get. So we were to blue these twenty francs We were to have a regular blow out.—Do not laugh one could have a regular blow out for twenty francs in a restaurant in 1811 True one did not get pearls dissolved in vinegar like Cleopatra, but all the same three people could lunch on twenty francs, at that time, as well as now a days for sixty

There was at that time in the Faubourg du Temple

ple, on the left as one went up the boulevard, just where later the Saint-Martin's Canal was constructed, a small restaurant called "Les Vendanges de Bourgogne" It became later one of the most prosperous cafés in Paris, doing the best business in club-dinners and wedding-feasts After a period of brilliant success, it fell back into obscurity, like so many nations, men and things *Sic transit gloria mundi*

It was to Legrand's restaurant "Les Vendanges de Bourgogne" that Maricot took us It was a fine morning, our table was laid in the garden, and as we had come early, before the rush of customers, we were served quickly and well

We had swallowed our oysters Happy time, when there were oysters for all, just as now-a-days there are newspapers for all We were beginning to tackle the kidneys, when an old man, whose hair was a dirty white and whose nose was the colour of a beetroot, suddenly appeared in the entrance to our arbour, and addressed us, in a hoarse voice, as follows

"Well done, young men Celebrate Comus and Bacchus Nothing in this world is true but pleasure As to the rest, Fame, Fortune, Love, bah! They're worth nothing Eat and drink But, if you want to, be good fellows, give me a glass of white wine I am fond of it, of white wine And I havn't a half-penny this morning, to buy myself a glass of white wine Just fancy To answer to the name of Dor-

vigny to be thirsty and not to have a farthing!

We had all been on the point of ejecting this strange old beggar but when we heard his name we thought better of it. Dorvigny it was Dorvigny who stood before us! Dorvigny the author of the *Desespoir de Joerisse* of *Janot ou les Battus paient l'Amende* of *Blaise le Hargneux* of *Les Tu et les Toi* and of so many other pieces which had been played hundreds of times. We looked at him with curiosity and with pity also for his appearance both in face and in form was altogether a wretched one. His eyes alone though dimmed by chronic drunkenness had retained their look of humour and intelligence. There was still a little flame aglow in this brain which had been exhausted by so many debauches.

The waiter who had seen the old man sidling into our arbour rushed forward to turn him out. We interfered.

This gentleman is one of our friends said Paris. He is good enough to take a glass of wine with us *en passant*.

Dorvigny shrugged his shoulders, as the waiter withdrew.

The scoundrels he said in a tone which Frederick Lemaitre afterwards used in his part in *L'Auberge des Adrets*. The scoundrels I am one of the foundation stones of their pothouse I take my food here, I work here I would even sleep here if they would let me and they have no more respect

for me than they have for a street arab Well, gentlemen, here's to your health Their Chablis is not too bad, though they don't know how to clarify it Look at it, it isn't clear, it's not as limpid as it should be But, brrr! it goes down all the same"

"Do you live in this quarter, M Dorvigny?" I asked

"Yes, my young friend, I live opposite the barracks over the Luquet dancing-rooms, but I am going to move shortly In the morning there is the drum and the trumpet and in the evening the fiddles and the flutes and that worries me"

"And you still go on working"

"Of course I write plays for Ribié, the director of the Gaîté But Ribié is a stingy curmudgeon Formerly he used to pay me sixty francs for a vaudeville in one act, but now he only pays me forty—and wants to put his name to them into the bargain Stingy and conceited I'll send him to the devil A second go of Chablis, gentlemen—I can't walk on one leg—and then I'll leave you to lunch in quiet"

"Oh, you are not the least in our way, Monsieur Dorvigny It's always a pleasure to talk with a man of intellect"

Dorvigny shook his head

"Intellect," he cried "What's the use of having intellect. It only serves to put money into other people's pockets"

"That's true," said I "Nicolet ought to have left you an annuity, when he died You helped him

to earn enough money for that.

I have no complaint to make about Nicolet. Nicolet was a good hearted man. He never refused me the price of a bottle. And then he was jolly and even if he did sweat me at times he was always funny. As for that beast Ribie he always looks as if he would burst out crying over each miserable crown piece that one squeezes out of him.

But said Paris if the reports about your birth are true — as I am assured they are — I am surprised my dear Monsieur Dorvigny, that—were it only in consideration for the noble blood which flows in your veins—certain persons—of the highest standing—should allow you to work for a living at your age. I am well aware that obliged by circumstances to live away from their native country it may be difficult for these persons to give you direct proofs of—the interest they take in you yet after all they are rich and if they were to send you a hundred pieces of gold every year it wouldn't ruin them and it would help you to live.

This muddled speech of Paris was an allusion to a belief of very old standing in Paris that Dorvigny was the natural son of Louis XV. This belief was based on his extraordinary resemblance to that king. If such was the case he never seemed to have had much reason to bless his stars in having a king for a father for he had always been a poor man earning his living at the theatres as author or actor.

One thing is certain namely that whilst my friend

was talking to him about the noble blood which flowed in his veins, Dorvigny's face showed how little pleased he was to hear this subject discussed Pâris noticed what impression he had made, and mumbled out his last sentence As for Maricot and myself, we both felt ill at ease as we saw the old man so suddenly turning grave and sad However, the situation did not last long

Dorvigny had swallowed his second glass of *Chablis* Setting his glass down on the table, he tapped Pâris on the shoulder with the tips of his fingers and said

"Intelligent youth loves to learn, but sage old age loves not to speak And in any case, my young friend, you must admit that were I—what you think I am, it would not be very seemly of me to boast about it at this time of day"

Pâris was about to speak, but Dorvigny continued

"You seem to be three charming young fellows—and it remains for me to thank you for your courtesy It will be my turn next, some day when I have some money And so, a very good-day Should you happen to meet Ribié you can tell him he is a curmudgeon and that I would rather die of hunger than continue to write plays for him at forty francs a piece!"

Dorvigny had gone away

"It would appear," said Maricot, "that the son of the 'Well-Beloved' does not much care to hear his

descent discussed

'Which is a proof that he really is his son said
I He keeps his pride even in his destitution

Yes said Paris and I am very sorry that I
touched on a subject which offends him as it ap-
pears

All the same gentlemen we must admit that
whether he is the son of a king or of a boot black
it is a wretched end for a man of talent such as
Dorvigny was to go begging for drinks from strang-
ers in a greasy coat and without uppers to his
boots

If I were a rich man I would place Dorvigny in a
hospital

Where he wouldn't remain a week said Mar-
icot To live he must have wine not herb tea and
he would far rather sleep in the gutter than in a
good bed

Maricot was in the right Two or three months
later some actors generously subscribed to a fund
got up on his behalf by Brunet and Dorvigny hav-
ing a couple of hundred francs in his pocket drank
enough brandy to kill him, and did kill himself Ma-
ricot was quite right

I have related how after having in vain pursued
that timid bird called a publisher I put away *My Wife's Child* at the bottom of a cupboard and left
it there for two years

During two years indeed discouraged by the

want of success which had attended my first literary effort, I did not write a single line elsewhere than at my office I had broken my pen as a novelist, and had no thoughts of taking a fresh one to myself It would, however, be a mistake to think that my grief, at the annihilation of my literary dreams, had any influence on my character during these two years I was born with a great stock of philosophy I never made long speeches—as under similar circumstances I have heard so many people do—when ever a misfortune or a worry has assailed me I have always tried to ward off the one, to forget the other, and I always succeeded in so doing Thus, when I was eighteen years old, I hawked my first book round fifteen different publishers' shops None of these gentlemen would have anything to do with it, they had no confidence in my budding talents All right, to the devil with literature To the devil, for a time For, of course, I had not given up all hope for ever No, I imitated those gamblers, who, when they see that the luck is against them, do not fight it, but prudently withdraw, and whilst awaiting the smiles of Fortune, make haste to hide their cash Glory repulsed me—so I consoled myself for the disdain of Glory with the smiles of Love

I have no intention of relating all my love adventures as a young man in this book Not that I am ashamed of them, on the contrary, I am outspoken and I say that I always remember them with pleasure I have a far greater esteem for Anacreon, who,

at eighty sang of Venus than I have for Origen who at twenty sacrificed his manhood so as to be able to teach religion without diversions to women and maidens. But I know what a prudish age this is. It is not to day that I should venture to publish my *La Pucelle de Belleville*. Oh! Oh! The virtuous journalists beginning with M. Veuillot would not have stones enough in their bags wherewith to stone me to death. However as I imagine that *The Mémoirs of Paul de Kock* without some light stories would seem as much an anomaly as an article by one of the journalists in question without impudent or insolent remarks I would crave permission to relate as occasion may present itself some of the most amusing of the gallant adventures which have befallen me. But don't be afraid. You won't have to hide under the table to read them. A light story is quite a different thing from an indecent story. My pen may have often been light it has never been immoral. And with all deference to M. Veuillot I may remark that a Pope in person—Gregory XVI—was of this opinion and showed it by taking pleasure in reading my novels.

In its proper place I will give some curious evidence—which nobody has yet heard—to prove this statement.

What oratorical precautions to apologize that an old man I remember the time when I was young! But it is once for all and henceforward I shall follow my path in this book without troubling myself

any more about my censors I was going to write *génècurs*, a new word It's a good word Let us turn our backs on censors and *génècurs* alike

Well, then, during two years, from the autumn of 1811 to the autumn of 1813, I did no literary work of any sort, but gave myself entirely up to my pleasures, as far, of course, as was allowed of by my occupations as a bank clerk and by the extent of my moderate means But I am one of those who hold that it is by no means indispensable to be rich to enjoy oneself, and that, especially with women, a man who is young, good-looking and jolly, and fairly clever, has as good a chance as a man with a bag of gold At least it was so in my time Perhaps, things have changed since then So many things have changed since then If this is true in this respect also, well, all I can say is that I am sorry for our young men, and for the women too

I may say it now I was good-looking when I was a young man I was not tall, and people used to complain that when walking, I carried my head on one side, but I was slender, slim Too slim perhaps, and for many years my people thought I should go off in a consumption Well, such as I was, women did not throw their arms round my neck at first sight, but once they had done so they seemed to like to stay there One of my favourite places, for hunting up female acquaintances, was the Tivoli It was a garden the like of which is no more to be found in Paris Are there many people living who re-

member it? I do not think so for it is now more than forty years since it was closed. The Tivoli was situated on the site where that block of houses now stands which is near the Havre railway station on the right as one comes from the boulevard. One reached it by the Rue St. Lazarc which was formerly the Rue d'Argentcul et des Porcherons. The entrance cost three francs twelve sous which you see was not ruinous. But, *par exemple* all the side shows had to be paid for extra with the exception of the fireworks and the Théâtre Bobeche. One paid extra for the swings of which there was a great variety for the merry go rounds the Egyptian Birds and the switchback railway. Oh the switch back railway I was crazy about it and spent all my money in rides. There was also a man who made grimaces. Grimacers were fashionable at that time —are they not so still? The Tivoli *grimacier* was a jolly fellow. He wore a white wig and played the trumpet and the violin. There was also a fortune teller, a sorcerer perched up in a hermitage, and an artist with scissors who lived in a hut and cut out silhouette portraits. In my book *Mon Voisin Raymond* I have related the misadventures of the said Raymond who is forced to hide for three hours in the studio of the silhouette cutter to escape the pursuit of the man with the Egyptian Bird, whose eye he had knocked out. The incident is a true one by the way as are almost all the incidents which I have related in my novels. What comic scenes I

witnessed at Tivoli. What funny things I heard in the crowds which thronged the illuminated walks, or, better still, amongst the couples in the arbours. And when the fireworks began, what cries of joy which often ended in cries of terror. A rocket falling on a lady's shawl, or bonnet—! And the ball! Ah, as to public balls as they were then, nobody can contest the superiority of the past over the present. No doubt it was a very mixed company at the Tivoli dances, one didn't meet noble lords and ladies there, but whatever the people may have been—lower middle-class folk or shop-keepers in their Sunday clothes, with their good ladies, shop-boys and grisettes—if there was nothing distinguished about them, there was also nothing low. Everybody danced decently, heartily, if not elegantly. Even the ladies of light virtue, the *demi-vertus* or *demi-castors* as they were called in those days, those whom one now calls *cocottes*, who frequented the Tivoli gardens, behaved themselves respectably. One could join in a quadrille with them, without having to blush for one's partner's sense of decency.

I was fond of dancing, and especially of waltzing, when I was twenty years old. I could have danced a whole hour without stopping, timing myself by my watch. Unfortunately, few are the women who waltz well, or at least so it was in 1812 at the Tivoli. So, before asking a woman, or a girl to waltz with me, I always used to watch her first as she waltzed with somebody else.

It was in this way that one evening I noticed a woman whom I did not remember to have ever seen before at this ball. Her appearance was out of the common. She was dark twenty five or thirty years old and beautiful eyes a small foot, magnificent hair and was dressed with taste if without *recherche*. And how she waltzed! She was a living teetotum. Oh her partner was not at all up to her mark. It was he who had to give in first, to beg for mercy. I saw her smile contemptuously.

Tired already monsieur? Very well let us stop.

He led her back to her seat. I spring forward.

Madame, if you are not tired I don't tire not I.

She looked me up and down and I will wager that she guessed that my talents were on a par with my boldness. Great minds understand each other at first sight. Without saying a word she left the arm of her broken winded partner and took mine and off we went like a whirlwind.

To make a long story short my partner was as satisfied with me as I with her, and so not only did we waltz but danced all other dances together all the evening and when the ball was over we took it as a matter of course that I should offer to see her home and that she should accept my escort.

She had come to the Tivoli with a lady friend who left us at the Faubourg Montmartre and as she lived in the Rue de Grenelle Saint Honore we had plenty of time to talk as we walked along. I had offered to take a cab but she preferred to walk. She

was married, her name was Madame O., her husband had been a sailor, he was twenty years her senior and spent his days and nights at the café Sic had only been living in Paris for three months, before that she had lived at Havre Having heard of the Tivoli, she had been tempted to go there and she did not regret it at all, as she had enjoyed herself very much

Dénouément of the evening. Madame O. was at the door of her house, a house where there was a newspaper printing office

"Shall I have the pleasure of seeing you again, Madame?"

"Certainly, whenever you please, monsieur"

"As your husband is always away from home, mayn't I pay you a little call—to-morrow, or the day after?"

"I shall be most glad to see you"

It went as smoothy as our waltz I was delighted, and the next evening at seven o'clock I presented myself at Madame O.'s

It was an apartment on the third floor, and well furnished The old sailor must have been a man of means What struck me principally was an ornament in the drawing-room, which lay between the bedrooms of Madame and Monsieur—they slept apart It was a trophy of every kind of weapon used by the savages, and hung against the wall By Jove, what a collection of swords and arrows, of spears and knobkerries M. O. had brought them all

back on his voyages from the Indies They were superb

And a good half of these weapons are poisoned said Madame O

Poisoned! What delightful knick knacks She had sent her servant away on my arrival telling her she should not want her agun till the morning So we were alone I was in love Time went rapidly by and when the clock struck eleven I could not be heve my ears I had fancied it was not yet eight.

However if I had every reason to believe that my feelings were reciprocated I had as yet no right to sing of victory And so great was my distress when seeing how late it was I decided to go Twidd ling my hat in my fingers I kept looking round the room which it seemed I must leave disconsolate my gaze rested especially upon a bed hung with blue curtains on which hitherto my aspirations had centred

Madame O laughed

Oh look here I sud you are very cruel You dont love me

Oh indeed! And why don't I love you?

Because you let me go

Oh! You would like to stay perhaps

'Why of course! Since your husband has his own bedroom and since every night as you tell me he comes home half drunk where's the danger, even though I stay the whole night with you?

"You're mad"

"There's a printing office downstairs and so the front-door remains open all night at dawn I could easily slip out without being noticed by the porter He would take me for one of the compositors"

"You are mad, I tell you"

"I am not mad in the least When does your husband usually come in?"

"At midnight And you see the way the rooms are arranged he's got to cross through mine to get to his"

"Well, what of that! We'll put out the candle, and draw the bed-curtains your husband will believe you are asleep Besides, as I said before, as he is always drunk, he won't trouble himself about you He'll go straight to his own room—

"Eh Coralie, (Coralie was the Christian name of my little waltzer) my pretty Coralie, won't you "

Between ourselves, it was for pure form that I spoke to her like this, a lover's braggadocio I liked her very much, but not so much as to care to risk my life for her I implored her with such ardour because I was convinced that she would refuse me I was merely playing a scene out of a novel in the style of *Faublas* Imagine my astonishment when suddenly clasping my head in her two hands, Madame O cried out

"All right. I agree, you little monster Stay"

I must have turned pale, but Madame O did not notice it She put out the candles There was no

drawing back now and certainly I didn't draw back In five minutes I had rejoined her beneath the curtains

What sort of woman then was this creature who didn't shrink from receiving in her arms in her bed a lover when her husband's room was but a step away And what a lover! a young fellow whom she had known for four and twenty hours! For those who moralize the answer does not admit of doubt this woman was a libertine of the worst kind As for me, who am naturally inclined to look upon all human weaknesses with indulgence I am content to say that madame O was nothing more than a silly creature, who acted as she did without thinking and observe—I speak from experience *in anima vili*, let it be noted—who yielded in this circumstance to a caprice of her mind rather than to the impulse of her passions There are more women in the world than one imagines who have resembled and who will resemble Madame O in this respect

However that may be I must at the risk of giving a sorry opinion of my juvenile courage avow that I found this night singularly long As far as I was concerned the pleasure was no compensation for my anxiety And it was less during the hours of the night that this anxiety tormented me The husband had returned as was his wont at midnight and with a step heavy from drink although endeavouring to go lightly so as not to dis

turb a slumber which was dear to him, having crossed through madame's bed-room, had reached his own bed, where doubtless he hadn't delayed to stretch himself, and fall asleep. But when the first gleam of dawn began to whiten the casement, warning me that the moment had come to slip away, I began to feel extremely uneasy. Madame O gazed at me, as I dressed myself, and smiled. But I! I didn't smile, I was seized with an attack of the shivers, and my heart beat rapidly.

I put on my breeches, my waist-coat, and my coat. I arranged my tie, and seized my hat. But I didn't put on my boots.

"And your boots," said Coralie.

"I'll put them on outside on the landing."

"You are right they might make a noise on the floor. Although when *he* is asleep Oh! there's no danger! One might fire off a cannon in his room, and it wouldn't wake him!"

There was no danger possible not, but all the same I was none the less anxious to get away. Madame O got up in order to accompany me as far as the door on the landing, and to shut it after me.

We must have formed a curious group, she, in her chemise, I, dressed, and holding my boots in my hand. And, as we crept along on tiptoe, do you know of what I was thinking? I was thinking of the panoply of Indian weapons, of the poisoned lances and arrows. Behind me, I imagined Monsieur O springing up all at once, brandishing a formidable

bow I heard the whiz of an assagai and I felt the sharp point sink into my shoulders!

At length I reached the longed for door' It opened

I'll see you again to-night shan't I? said Co
ralie to me in a low voice.

Yes yes! to night

Ah ah! to night! wait for me under the ivy bough! Enough to have played for once a game like this, many thanks! It was only when I had put on my boots that I breathed again And when I was in the street ah I was ready to dance to sing to embrace all the sweepers and ragpickers whom I met

Paris to whom I related my adventure said That woman deserves to be flogged in a public place! Perhaps that was too severe although mad as I had been she was much to blame I need hardly say that I never saw her again Stay yes I did once three or four years later It was at the Gaite theatre and she was accompanied by some old gentleman her husband no doubt As she passed me in the *foyer* she cast a glance of withering contempt at me No doubt she thought I had behaved like a coward I did not mind her look in the least She may have regretted that I had not stayed to be killed I for my part was delighted to be still in the land of the living

CHAPTER V

My Wife's Child still — A bank clerk his own publisher — From seven to eight hundred francs to be procured — A mirage — Twenty napoleons destined to the gambling table — Intervention of my stepfather — The *Cercle des Étrangers* — Money won — Money lost — How my first novel at last saw the light of day — Kind friends — A halting success — Only four dozen copies — Should I write a second novel — A lucky meeting — Caigniez — A stop at the *Rocke de Cencal* — Should I become a dramatic author? — The Caveau in 1814 — The Chevalier de Puis — Armand Gouffé — Brazier — Eustache Salvette — De Jouy — Desaugiers — Théaulon — Beranger — Story of my first song *le Chevalier errant* — A Meeting with Martainville — An improvised play — A roll of blank paper — A literary man's little joke — Corsse, the millionaire director — What Napoleon used to be called in 1814 — Four melodramas in two years — The first performance of *Madame de Valnoir* — The man who triumphed in spite of himself — Parisians, weathercocks — Villeneuve — "You have come to do the same as I"

It was during the autumn of 1813 that I was once more bitten with literary ambition. I had got more and more sick of my office, and, in spite of what my mother had said, I could see no prospects there. To be just, I must add that my mother also began to see

that I shd never be so fortunate in that business
 The little lo the sum's to which my & epithet
 had been able to liberate me from military service
 twice in a month. I d p u all in rate consider-
 able extra i rite for my use. I shd d like to to
 g it a part of it out of the te chcl M Gv. now who
 woald have risked it all at the table. Under the
 circumstances, I had the right to say that no one
 ther would not object to the throwin up in elec-
 tions provided I had one free liberty tocess to
 be kept up.

But here was I to make this see a com, that
 the publishers would not publish a novel?

Such was my thought even; I w stut-
 m over the leavz of my book sp when I hld
 taken out of the cupboard where it is I brought it
 m, more and me e yellow so the past two years.
 A I compreheenly red o et certain p;ys I keep
 repeatin,—like Galileo repeatin, In finit E p;
 se muore— “All the time it met it illbad. Much
 wo e stuff than this has been printed.”

Printed? But what might it cost to print
 a two volume novel say in edition of five hundred
 copies. I thought that five hundred copies would
 be enou, h for a first edition. Six or seven hundred
 stunes. At six stunes the copy,—allowin, the book
 sellers a third in di count—that woald mean a profit
 of thirteen or fourteen hundred stunes provided all
 the edition was sold. And why should it not be sold?
 There was a book seller called Pirovetsu who would

place the book at the shops, in return for a small commission, if I brought it to him printed He had offered to do so, this excellent Pigoreau

Yes, but where was I to find the seven hundred francs wanted by the printer

I had just received my salary that day , ten bright new gold coins To think that with little more than treble that amount, I could command the public ear, the press Take a first step, perhaps, towards the temple of Fame'

I was tossing the coins in the hollow of my hand, in a melancholy manner, dreaming these day-dreams , an exercise, alas, which did not increase their number Suddenly a light broke in on me. An evil light I admit, but, in a desperate case, one takes what light one can I had never set foot in a gambling-house, what was to prevent me from trying to get the money I wanted at such a place

But of all resources gambling is the most deceptive, the least reliable Had not this been proved to me thousands of time by the thousand battles lost a thousand times, by M Gaigneau, on the green cloth? It is true, my stepfather lost oftener than he won, but then he was almost a professional gambler, and Fate, tired of her constant struggles with him, turned her back on him, nine times out of ten I, on the contrary, was only a gambler by chance And whether lucky or not, I swore it, I would never gamble again after that once And who knows? "Full hands to the innocent," says a proverb Who knows

but that my very want of experience my clumsiness, would not propitiate Fortune in my favour

I put my two hundred francs in my pocket and I set out along the boulevards to the Palais Royal

I was passing the Porte Saint Denis when I heard myself called by a voice which I knew well. It was my stepfather on his way home from his office

Where are you off to so fast?

I I I've got an appointment

Oh Is your mother at home?

Yes That is to say I don't know Stop yes I think that she is

I was confused My conscience was pricking me M Gaigneau noticed it for he continued

Come what is the matter with you Paul this evening? You don't look the same as usual Has something gone wrong? Tell me all about it, my boy

M Gaigneau spoke affectionately and put his arm in mine After all my stepfather was no Cato—very far from it If I confessed what my plan was he might give me some good advice nobody would do so better

Well dear father I said. 'You must not scold me I'll tell you all about it I must absolutely have seven hundred francs and I am going to try and win them at roulette

M Gaigneau gave a start

'What you wretch, you are going to gamble?

"Oh"

"Yes, I know that I have no right to preach you a sermon on the vice of gambling"

"Oh I didn't mean to say that, Papa Whatever you may do, you have a perfect right to try and prevent me from making a fool of myself But as I say, I must have seven hundred francs"

"Seven hundred francs? What for?"

"To print my novel The publishers reject it I want to do without the publishers You see, once *My Wife's Child* is printed, people will be forced to read it"

"Forced, eh? Well, so you hope, my boy, and I'd far rather see you spend your money in that way than wasting it in other kinds of folly You'll always get something more for your money And what capital have you got to try for seven hundred francs?"

"I have two hundred francs My salary, which I have just received"

"Two hundred Yes, one can do something at the tables with two hundred francs And where did you mean to try your luck?"

"As to that, I am not quite sure It's the first time, you see, that . I had been thinking of No 113, or Frascati's"

"Frascati's No, no! Don't go to Frascati's It's too dangerous there for young players There are women there, and at your age, women are in the way You had better go to the Palais-Royal,

or better still But ro, you haven t been introduced so they wouldn t let you in at the Cercle des Etrangers

Is that a decent place the Cercle des Etrangers?

It s the best place of the kind the best kept and the most genuine It s kept by an ex chamberlain of the Emperor the Marquis de Cussy

And do you go to the Cercle des Etrangers?

Yes sometimes, when I m in funds And I ve often enough been lucky there

Oh indeed '

But even the best of these houses is never worth anything I think I ought to know and if you re wise

Dear father!

No you don t want to be wise You have made up your mind to risk your two hundred francs All right Now a thought has struck me it s a plan and perhaps it s a plan that you won t approve of Never mind I ll tell it to you all the same

I am all ears

You have never gambled therefore you don t know how to gamble And besides you are nervous impressionable and would play badly You would lose

But don t people say that those who play for the first time

Always win That s silly talk for silly people No Fortune is by no means so gracious as that towards novices or else all novices would have a dead

certain chance, and could break all the banks in turn There is a certain art in gambling, one must have a certain amount of *sang-froid* One must calculate, on the bases of the probabilities Of course in spite of all that, one is never certain of ”

“And what’s your plan, Papa?”

“Oh, my plan It’s very simple A thing that happens often, very often Oh, people notice it every day—is that when a player is playing on somebody else’s behalf, with somebody else’s money—he wins”

“Oh, indeed?”

“You trust me?”

“Of course How can you ask me?”

“Well, you trust me with your two hundred francs I go to the Cercle des Etrangers You walk up and down outside, and wait for me I play—prudently, but, of course, not like a coward, just as if I were playing on my own account And I swear to you, do you hear me, Paul, I swear to you on my honour—that as soon as I have won a thousand francs—seven hundred francs, you know, isn’t a round sum—I’ll bring them to you Well, what do you say?”

I hesitated, not that I had any fear of M Gaigneau, but because I did not quite like to risk my ten napoleons and perhaps to lose them, without even having the excitement of staking them But then it struck me that this very excitement might be my undoing

“All right,” I said

Without exchanging another word we walked with rapid strides to the Rue de Richelieu to the Cercle des Etrangers which was not far from Frascati's

M Gaigneau remained there an hour—an hour which seemed to me as long as a century Ah! the prettiest woman on earth might have smiled at me as she passed during that hour I should have paid no more attention to her than to a hunchback At last as quite worn out with anxiety I had sat down on the opposite side of the street I saw my step father come out. He looked pale and upset and it was with a very mournful expression that he came up to me

Well?

'Well poor old chap it wasn't my fault but
A cloud came over my eyes and my heart sank
My Child would have to go back to its cupboard
But mastenng my emotion I cried out

All right Let's say nothing more about it Papa

Oh cried M Gaigneau suddenly changing his expression and his tone you are too good Paul and it's a shame to tease you any longer I have won your thousand francs

Is it true? Are you sure it's true? You're not you're not laughing at me?

Heaven forbid Let's go into a cafe and I'll give you your money

Resigned as I had been in adversity I was nearly mad with joy Hidden away in a corner of a cafe

with my stepfather, I did not tire of looking at my thousand francs. As a matter of fact, I had twelve hundred francs, for my stepfather had won the thousand francs over and above my stake. So I was richer than I had wanted to be. I was too rich.

"I only wanted seven hundred francs," I said to M. Gaignau, "and I have twelve hundred. It's only fair that you should keep five hundred."

"No, no, it's all yours."

"I beg of you."

"Not at all, my boy. It's better to have more than less when you are publishing a book. There may be expenses which you have not thought of."

"Well, I'll keep nine hundred francs and you shall take three hundred."

"No, I tell you."

"Yes, or I shall get angry."

M. Gaignau pocketed the three hundred francs.

"Very well," he said, "I'll take them and do you know why I take them? It's because I'm quite sure of being able to give you them back in an hour, after having won another thousand."

"Oh, do you think so?"

"I'm in luck to-night. I feel it. And I can tell you, it cost me something to leave the tables just now. But, you see, I had sworn it. Wait for me here. Wait for me, I shan't be long."

How could I say "Be careful, Fortune is fickle," to a man who had just made me so happy? Besides, to tell the truth, I did not think that M. Gaignau

would lose

He was not long indeed I had just time to jot down a few figures concerning my publishing scheme, and to take a *ri au lait* when I saw him coming back

He tried to smile

'You have won?

He shook his head I thought he was joking again

Come tell me the truth

I have lost it all my friend Oh! that's the truth this time P'suit in five goes it was all cleared out. But that was inevitable and I ought to have thought of it I had broken the run of luck by leaving the table and couldn't join the broken ends again

I felt in my pockets

Will you

What?

Will you let me give you another two hundred francs?

M Gaigneau put out his hand with a rapid gesture But the man the father the friend was ashamed of this movement, and warding me off

No he said quickly That's enough Pay the waiter and let us go home to bed It's quite late enough

And whilst I was paying the waiter, he started out of the cafe no doubt to escape the temptation I only caught up with him on the Boulevard Bonne Nouvelle

Let us finish the story of the publication of my first novel—a story which I have perhaps already spun out too much But, gentle reader, you must pardon me Poor as that book is, it was the starting-point of my career, and if you have given me reason to congratulate myself on having become a novelist, it would be ungrateful on my part to despise my beginnings, inglorious as they were

I had my book printed by a printer in the Rue de Turenne Each copy of the five hundred, including stitching and covers, cost me eight pence a volume My thousand volumes, accordingly, cost me eight hundred francs Then there was the discount to the booksellers, besides Pigoreau's commission, and besides that, a quantity of general expenses which I had not thought of, for instance, the carriage of the books to the shops, two presentation copies to each of the principal newspapers If I wanted the journalists to speak of my book, I had, of course, to let them know of it In one word, I might think myself very lucky, if after selling the whole edition, I got my money back again And that did not allow for a dozen copies which I had kept for my friends and acquaintances

It was just the distribution of these twelve copies which caused me the most annoyance My mother and my stepfather gave me some words of praise, and so did Pâris and Maricot But the others !

"Oh, that's by you, is it Oh, indeed So you want to become a famous man? Humph, a difficult

task my dear boy You know the saying *Non licet omnibus adire Corinthum*

My Wifes Child I don't like that title It's not in good taste.

Are there any ghosts any spools in your novel? I don't care about anything else?

I have read your book, my dear Paul it's funny But be careful you have a tendency to sail too near the wind and a writer who does not respect his readers you know will never be more than a third rate author

And then the remark of a gallant lady whom I was courting at the time and to whom I had carried my book with all haste as soon as it left the printers thinking that would help on my su†

I must say you're very good to take the trouble to write books like this This you're very good seemed to me so stupid that it dealt a death blow to my love

I went every day to Pigoreau's to hear how it was selling Four dozen copies were sold the first week I was in ecstasies There was no doubt about it the edition would be exhausted in two months But, the second week only two dozen were sold and only one dozen the third And after that, no more dozens at all only one or two copies, here and there In my enthusiasm I had sketched out a second novel *Georgette ou la Nièce du tabellion* but this knocked my enthusiasm on the head What was the use of writing if nobody read me? I was all the

more upset, because, in the first transports of my joy at having sold four dozen copies, I had thrown up my place at the bank Could a famous novelist remain a petty bank-clerk? Yes, but the petty bank-clerk was earning two hundred francs a month, and the novelist—whilst awaiting his fame—was earning nothing at all

I was moodily returning one evening from Pigoreau's, when, as I was walking down the Rue Montorgueil, I met Caigniez, celebrated at that time as the author of a number of melodramas which rivalled, as successes, those of Guilbert de Pixérécourt. Caigniez used to be called the *Racine* and Pixérécourt, the *Corneille* of the boulevard. Racine-Caigniez was a little man, about fifty years old, gentle and unassuming. He was fond of me, because, one day, in telling him how I had seen one of his first pieces *la Forêt enchantée ou la Belle au bois dormant*, when I was only seven years old—it was a melodrama and fairy-tale combined which had been played at the Gaîté theatre in the Year VIII,—I had quoted at full length some of the verses in it. He was one of the first persons to whom I gave a copy of my book, and he had paid me a compliment about it, which I never forgot.

"One can judge a writer's future by his first book," he said. "Your book is no masterpiece, but it has humour in it. A man who can write like that at eighteen, ought to be a man of talent at thirty."

Caigniez died at an advanced age, for he used to

come and see me at Romainville as late as 1832 and 1833 I may mention that my wife did not at all care for his coming to our house and this was the reason As a young man the author of *la Pie ro lecuse* had had the leprosy — yes the real leprosy—and he took delight in this souvenir it seemed interesting to him to be perhaps the only Parisian who could boast of having been a leper It was an old man's craze At any rate, whenever my wife saw him coming she used to make a face It was no use my telling her that there was no danger that Caigniez had been cured years ago she was not at her ease after his departure till she had washed the hand with which she had shaken his with quantities of soap and of Eau de Cologne

To go back to the beginning of 1814 when I met Caigniez in the Rue Montorgueil

'Well he said and how's your *Child* going'

'So so Monsieur Caigniez. It's true that P go reau tells me that the sales of books always fall off in January'

'He's quite right January is only good for the toy shops and confectioners'

'And for the theatres'

'Humph Theatres are beginning badly this year You see, the political outlook is such a gloomy one that people have no wish to go to the play And you Monsieur de Koch where are you going now'

'I'm going home'

'You haven't dined Won't you come and dine

with me at Baleine's Just potluck, you know"

I could not refuse an invitation so cordially made I followed Caigniez into the Rocher de Cancale, a restaurant at the corner of the Rue Mandar, which had become fashionable since the monthly dinners of the Caveau Moderne had been held there It happened to be the 20th, the very day on which this club of singers met People used to fight for the private rooms which adjoined the room reserved for these gentlemen, so as to hear them sing As an *habitué* of the house and especially as a dramatic author—a qualification held in high esteem by Baleine, Caigniez got one of these private rooms But it was still early and we had plenty of time to dine and chat before the singing began

"Why don't you try your hand at writing for the stage, my dear de Kock?" asked Caigniez between the pear and the cheese

"I am frightened of failing"

"Bah, there's nothing in a melodrama or a vaudeville It takes months of work to write a novel, whilst a three-act play can be written in three weeks, if one chooses"

"But I don't know any managers"

"You'll get to know them Corsse, the manager of the Opera Comique, is a very good chap"

"And what about M Bourguignon, of the Gaîté?"

"Bourguignon is a good fellow also, but he's under his wife's slipper and she's not always very pleasant"

"So it would be better to try something for the

Ambigu?

'Yes that would be better than for the Gaite Work and as soon as it's ready I'll introduce you to Corsse

Oh many thanks in advance

I was so pleased at the thought of this new opening that whilst listening in an absent minded way to the songs of the Caveau people who had begun to sing I began to think out the plot of my melodrama However the shouts of laughter and the thunders of applause soon brought me back to the attention due to the talents and the fame of the people in the next room Caigniez who knew them almost all quite intimately named each singer, as he heard his voice. There were Puis who combined his laurels as a singer with his salary as Secretary General at the Prefecture of Police Armand Gouffe who was called the Panard of the XIXth century Brazier Eusebe Salverte who afterwards abandoned poetry for politics and went into the Chamber on the opposition side Jouy who had not yet written *William Tell* with Rossini but who had already written *La Vestale* and *Fernand Cortez* with Spontini and *L'ermite de la Chaussee d'Antin* by himself two volumes for which the public was fighting at the bookstalls Rougemont Desaugiers the merriest of them all Theaulon Beranger who that night at the general request sang his *Roi d'Yvetot* a witty criticism on the Emperor's despotic government, a criticism which unfortunately in 1814 sounded more like a

dirge than a skit

Later on, I made the acquaintance of most of those whom I have named. Indeed, it was at the suggestion of Armand Gouffé—who could be as charming at times as at other times he was bitter and sour—that I also wrote songs. Under the Restoration, notably, I wrote a song, of which no doubt you have never heard, but which, in its day, was played on the barrel organs, not only over all Paris, but throughout the whole of France. Mengal wrote the music, and the tune remained popular at the theatres for years. It was called *le Chevalier errant*, and procured me the honour of a reply, also in verse and to the same tune, from a poet in Bordeaux, who wrote, in the name of the fair sex in his native town—that if my *Chevalier errant* had never met with faithful sweethearts, it was because his travels had never carried him as far as the capital of the Gironde.

This is the first verse of this song :—

In an old castle of Andalusia,
In the days when Love was still faithful,
When beauty, valour and gallantry
Guided a faithful lover to the fight,
A brave knight, one evening presented himself,
With vizor raised and his lance in his hand,
He comes to ask if his dear lady-love
Be not perchance, with the lord of the castle.

¹ Dans un vieux château de l'Andalousie,
Au temps où l'amour se montrut constant,
Où beauté, valeur et galanterie
Guidaient au combat un fidèle amant,
Un preux chevalier, un soir se présente,
Visière levée et lance à la main,
Il vient demander si sa douce amante
N'est pas, par hasard, chez le châtelain

There are four verses Don't be afraid I am not going to quote any more Yet young man who read me, if your grandfather or grandmother be still alive lay this verse before her or him and I will wager when you see *her* or *him* smile as he or she hums this sweet souvenir of youthful days that you will not regret that I spoke to you of my first song

I was in luck that evening of the 20th January 1814 for as we were walking home Caigniez and I along the boulevards we were accosted by Martainville whom I then only knew by reputation and very proud I was to have a chat with him as we took a glass of punch together at the Cafe de la Gaite

I oughtn't to say, perhaps that I had a chat with him because Martainville never let anybody put in a single word I have met many people who resemble Martainville in this respect in my lifetime Besides at twenty the best thing I could do was to listen and so I did accordingly And, indeed I had no reason to regret it What a witty fellow he was! What high spirits Funny sayings and comic anecdotes poured from his lips He was a royalist as one knows Already foreseeing at that time that the Empire would be overthrown shaken as it was by a series of reverses he kept pouring out his stinging remarks about M de Buonaparte and all his humbugging family — I quote his own words — who were at last going to be kicked out of France by our legitimate king! One might gauge the destinies of a government by the more or less reserve with which people

speak of it in public places Martainville could not have said one half of what he said at the Café de la Gaîté that night, six months earlier, without being arrested

He left us, as he said, to go and "work at a play which Bourguignon had just ordered" And Caigniez, watching him as he went, shrugged his shoulders and said

"What a mad man—a mad man full of talent, who in spite of his worth will die in the gutter What good will it do him if Louis XVIII "kicks M de Buonaparte and all his humbugging family out of France?" If Martainville could bring the Bourbons back to the Tuileries in his pocket to-morrow, the Bourbons would have completely forgotten the author of *Le Pied de Mouton* the day after It's always a mistake for a light writer to try and play the politician People won't admit that a man who yesterday has made them laugh with some silly joke, can talk to them to-morrow of serious matters"

This was not bad reasoning—you will admit—on the part of a manufacturer of melodramas And Caigniez's words were prophetic Martainville, royalist in spite of everything, Martainville, more royalist than the king himself—made a very bad bargain He found neither fame nor fortune under the white flag

I must find place here for two anecdotes about him, not of a political nature, which Caigniez told me I do not think they are generally known.

Martainville had long promised Ribie the then manager of the Gaite to write him a pantomime and never did so. One day being in want of money (he was often taken that way) he called on Ribie and asked him for something on account of the piece.

I shan't give you anything on account said the manager 'because you have shown me over and over again that bits on account don't bind you in the least but—to-day is the 10th of the month—come on the 30th and read me the first two acts of your pantomime and I'll pay you then and there, five hundred francs in advance of royalties.'

Martainville reflected a moment. Then he said

'All right. But I won't come on the 30th but on the 20th. I can do two acts in ten days.'

'Just as you like. I am ready when you are.'

At noon on the day appointed Martainville turns up in the manager's office where he finds Ribie with Marty one of his leading actors who usually advised him on matters of business. Martainville has the manuscript of his two acts tied up with a pink ribbon under his arm. He takes his seat near the window and begins to read. Ribie and Marty who are sitting near the fire place a few steps off listen to him and shout with laughter. The first act has been read. Now for the second. Martainville does not stop even to drink the traditional glass of water so anxious is he to hear the praises of his audience. And praises he receives to his heart's content for the second act is at least as good as the first.

As soon as the reading is finished, he rolls up his manuscript and ties the roll up with the pink ribbon

Ribié and Marty cannot stop laughing It's charming It will run a hundred nights Oh, Martainville must make haste and write the third act

"You shall have it in a week And now, my twenty pounds"

"Here they are Oh, you have kept your word and I'll keep mine"

"Many thanks *Au revoir*"

Martainville slips the twenty-five napoleons into his pocket, throws the manuscript down on the table, and darts out, repeating "In a week"

"What a hit! What a hit that will make," continues Ribié, locking up his desk "I said a hundred nights It will run three hundred, if only "

"Hullo! I say!"

"What's up?"

It was Marty who had given this cry He had untied the pink bow, smoothed out the manuscript

T₁, was turning over the pages

on the p₁ But what's the matter, I say?" says the manager, Caign₁ nging forward

alist in ook here"

alist th₁ orror! The manuscript consists of a number

gain E blank pages of paper, on which not a trace of writ- white f₁ is to be seen Not a line, not a word, not even

I m₁ lot

him, no₁ get his twenty pounds, Martainville, as he sat me I do had improvised the two acts of his pantomime,

prose verse and scenic effects He did not write it out till six months later And Ribie and Marty used to say that when it was written it was not as good as the piece he had read to them out of his head

At any rate the trick as a literary *tour de force* was well worth twenty pounds

The second anecdote is of a rather more *decollete* nature

In the summer during the very hot weather it was Martainville's habit to dress in the costume of our Father Adam—before the fall He used to say that his thoughts came all the fresher for it

One afternoon a middle aged lady called on this author who as it happened was without a servant at the time

Martainville entirely taken up with his work goes and opens the door without thinking of his want of clothing

The lady runs away shrieking like a peacock Still as she absolutely had to speak to him she goes to the commissary of the quarter and begs him to go and ask M Martainville to choose a more suitable costume in which to receive her The commissaire who knew the author of *Grioussiana* goes off laughing up his sleeve at this fresh eccentricity and calls on Martainville whom he finds in the same primitive costume

Monsieur Martainville a complaint has been made against you at my office and I see that it was a well founded one

"A complaint? Who has made a complaint? And what about, Monsieur le Commissaire?"

"A lady, who has to talk business with you and who found you, as I find you now"

"Oh, quite right. But what would you have? It's so hot. And besides, hasn't a man a right, in his own house?"

"Certainly a man has a right to dress as he likes in his own house. Still, when somebody calls on business?"

"All right. I'll make that all right, M^e le Commissaire, don't you be frightened. Where is the lady, if you please?"

"Down-stairs, waiting for me to tell her when she can come up"

"Tell her she can come up in five minutes. My dress shall be faultless then, I promise you"

"All right."

The commissaire goes down and tells the lady that Martainville will be able to receive her in five minutes. When the five minutes have elapsed, the lady goes upstairs and rings for the second time at Martainville's door.

And for the second time she gives a cry of indignation and hurries away. For she finds Martainville dressed in nothing but an evening coat and a pair of white gloves.

She had come up from the country on behalf of an uncle of his, who, being about to die, wanted to make him his sole heir. Martainville never saw

the lady again and he never saw the legacy either
His joke was an expensive one

Caigniez had given me three weeks to write a melodrama. I finished it in a fortnight. It is true that I worked my hardest. Its title was *Madame de Valnoir* and it was taken from Ducray Duminil's novel. It was in three acts. I copied out the whole of these three acts in two nights in my very best writing and took them to Caigniez who good fellow that he was, read them at once. When I next called on him to hear his opinion he said Excellent, excellent. Let's go and see Corsse. He'll play that at once.

Corsse who twelve years previously had made the Ambigu as an actor in the play of *Madame Angot au serail* by Aude had become the manager of this theatre and had made a fortune of about three million francs in it. Corsse was already thinking of retiring in 1814 and was beginning to leave the management of business matters to his partner Madame de Puisaye. But he made a point of attending to all new pieces himself. So it was to him that Caigniez took me. He received me even more graciously than I had expected. He professed the highest esteem for Caigniez who had made him earn a lot of money.

Have you read the gentleman's play my friend? he asked

Yes

"And your opinion is that it has merit, since you are fostering it."

"It's full of merit"

"That's enough I'll just take a glance at it to see what it's about, and in two or three days we'll begin rehearsing it Your address is on the manuscript, M de Kock, I see I shall write to you, to-morrow, no doubt, to come and arrange the cast with me Is there a part for Fresnoy?"

"Yes, and there's a very good part also for Villeneuve and a comic part for Raffile"

"Good, good And the ladies? What's your idea? Madame de Valnoir ?"

"That's for Mademoiselle Le Roy "

"Is there nothing for Adèle Dupuis?"

"Oh, yes There's a part for Mlle Adèle Dupuis, which I am sure she will like"

"Bravo You shall have Mlle Le Roy and Mlle Adèle Dupuis, Villeneuve, Fresnoy, Raffile You shall have our best actors and actresses, and it won't be our fault—nor yours either, I'm sure—if *Madame de Valnoir* doesn't make her way It'll be the fault of that madman, that crackbrained fellow who just now is busy ruining France—and Paris, in consequence"

The "mad man," the "crackbrained fellow," to whom Corsse alluded, was the Emperor This is, however, spoken of Napoleon I, in Paris, in 1814, after his departure at the end of January, to fight the enemy who was invading France Out of sight,

out of mind He was still acclaimed when he was in the Tuilleries people had faith in his star but away in Champagne, exhausting himself in efforts of genius and courage to drive the coalized troops off the soil of the fatherland he was nothing but a mad man a crack brain, and everyone predicted I might almost say desired his fall blind to the irreparable disasters to all which the ruin of this one man would entail

I say what I think about public opinion in 1814 as I remember it in writing my memoirs for I confess it humbly I troubled my head but little about political matters in 1814 Like Retif de la Bretonne author of *Le Paysan perverti* who when the Terror was at its height busied himself only in writing and printing his novels so I during the two years 1814 and 1815 of such sad memory since they were the dates of two invasions thought of nothing but of writing my plays and getting them acted. I was a very bad citizen it may be said Not worse than another for if I had felt myself too weak to defend my country as a soldier I was at least honest enough not to set myself up as the severe judge of the acts of the man who after having governed it gloriously for fourteen years had cast it down into the abyss or as the servile flatterer of the man who by a turn of the wheel was called upon to govern France in his place Besides—and I do not conceal the fact—like my friend Benjamin Antier I have found politics the stupidest and dullest thing in the world

I can readily admit that a journalist, a deputy, who makes a name and sometimes a fortune by applauding or vilifying, day by day, such or such a form of government, does not share my opinion, but if those who live by monarchies or by republics are right—especially when their living is a good one—in booming the one or the other, I hold that those who have nothing to gain, and too often have to lose by changing this for that, are very big fools to trouble about that or this

Now, because I have always avoided mixing myself in these matters either by thought or deed, does that mean to say that I have remained indifferent to the too numerous revolutions which during the last forty years have in turn upheaved my country. Certainly not. Certain events have grieved me bitterly, whilst certain others on the contrary have pleased me very much. But, sympathy or grief, I have always kept it to myself, expecting as little from the master of whom I approved, as I feared of the master of whom I disapproved.

This digression has once again taken me far away from my subject. But it was necessary all the same for me to explain, how, whilst Napoleon was falling, to make room for Louis XVIII, who soon was to make room again for him and yet again to take his place afresh, I, for my part was writing melodramas

First of all, *Madame de Valnoir*, performed for the first time on March 23th, 1814.

Then *Catherine de Courlande*, played on the first

of September following

La Bataille de Veillanc, played on April 15th
1815

And *Le Troubadour portugais* (theres 1 title for
you)—played on November 7th of the same year

Four melodramas in two years A melodrama
every six months *Mon Dieu yes* And all the four
were played at the Ambigu Comique. Corsse and
Madame de Puisaye had opened their doors to me
and I had taken up my abode with them And if
it is matter for wonder that whilst France crushed
and bleeding changed her master four times and
that whilst twice over the foreigner trod victoriously
on the pavement of Paris, there should have been
found pens to write melodramas is it not a matter for
still greater wonder that in this same Paris 1 public
should have been found to listen to those melo
dramas and to applaud them? For, of my four plays
two especially were successful *Madame de Valnoir*
and *La Bataille de Veillanc* *Madame de Valnoir*
especially at the first performance brought me in for
an ovation with which I would gladly have dis
pensed You shall hear why

This first performance took place as I have said
on March 23rd, 1814 that is to say eight days before
the allied troops entered our gates On the morning
of March 23rd an army of 180 000 men was within
sight of Paris which Marmont and Mortier were pre
paring to defend like desperate men and on the
evening of that same day a new melodrama was

played at the Ambigu-Comique,—and the house was packed

Bread and shows, *Panem et circenses*, that, it is said, was what the Romans wanted The Parisians are less exacting Give them shows and they forget about eating , they forget even to bemoan their misfortunes

The play went splendidly from start to finish Fresnoy, Villeneuve, Joigny were excellent Raffile was delightful Mademoiselle Le Roy, in the third part, as a traitress, was magnificent Mademoiselle Adèle Dupuis, as the persecuted victim, was touching enough to melt rocks to tears

This of course, is what I thought in 1814 And, to tell the truth, the actors of those days were well worth those of the present time They had also the advantage of being infinitely less conceited than their successors of the present day

I was in the seventh heaven of delight After the first and second acts, I had not words of praise enough to bestow on the eminent performers of my play , after the third act I was anxious to twine wreaths for their brows Wreaths for the gentlemen and kisses for the ladies That is quite the usual thing, from author to actresses, after a successful first night, and there was one young lady especially, a Mlle Eleonore, whom I was particularly anxious to reward in this' way

We had come to the last scene In a few minutes all would be over and nothing would be left to be

done except to announce in the midst of unanimous applause that the piece which we have had the honour of performing to-night is by — My name? I was to hear my name proclaimed. At this thought my heart beat so fast that I could hardly breathe.

The piece ends with this *tirade* addressed by Count Albert de Richeville to Timon Vaklin.

Excellent old man I hope that you will not leave us. We will endeavour by our tenderness and by our affection to bring you to forget your misfortune in having given to the world such a monster as the one from whom we are so fortunately delivered.

At these words said by Villeneuve who was playing Count Albert de Richeville it was not applause which broke out in the theatre, but yells and howls of approval. What does that mean? I listen from my place in the wings to these frenzied shouts and am stupefied. The curtain falls. The author is called for amidst shouts and stampings of feet. The curtain is raised. Fresnoy goes up to the prompter's box.

Gentlemen the piece which we have had the honour of performing to-night is by M. Paul de Koch.

Bravo! Bravo! Long live Paul de Koch. Bring him out. Let us see the author.

Villeneuve came up to me laughing.

They want to see me I stammered and what for? It's not the usual thing is it?

No it's not except when the play is quite exceptionally good'

"Well"

"Well, my dear Sir, your play is thought exceptionally good, it appears—and do you know why? It's because of the last sentence 'We will try to bring you to forget the misfortune of having given to the world such a monster as the one from whom we are so fortunately delivered'"

"I don't take you"

"Don't you see that the audience sees in this sentence, an allusion to the *tyrant*, to the *Corsican ogre*, defeated by the allied troops, who, as every body hopes, will never set foot in Paris again"

"Ah, mon Dieu! But I never dreamt of any such allusion"

"I believe you. But you see the audience saw it, and that is why they want to show you their gratitude. Eh, Eh! Do you hear them? They are calling you. You can't disappoint them, my dear Sir. You must go and enjoy your triumph!"

Villeneuve began leading me on to the stage.

"No," I cried, freeing myself. "No, I did not mean to refer to the Emperor when I wrote those words. I should blush to have written anything so insulting. So I won't answer this call. Good-bye!"

And so saying I ran off, without thanking my actors, and, what I felt far more, without kissing the actresses.

And the strangest part of it is, that my mother, my stepfather and all my friends were convinced, just as my audience had been, that I had meant the

defeated Napoleon by my *monster* On what strange things do destinies depend Had I had any taste for politics, I could have set up as a political writer from that day forth Fortunately the sentence which had attracted so much attention at the first performance passed unnoticed at the second, for the approach of the enemy and the imminence of a battle had begun in spite of all to frighten the Parisians a little and in consequence the theatre was only half full And as my horror for politics in this matter exceeded my interests as an author I was pleased rather than vexed with the lukewarm attitude of the crowd

Oh these Parisians what weathercocks they are ! I have always had the deepest pity for the people who have tried to keep them to one thing—an impossible task

I have seen the Parisians at the Ambigu Comique on March 23rd 1814 applauding the prospect of the overthrow of the Empire

A week later I saw them dirtying their white handkerchiefs on the boulevards wiping up the dust under the feet of the horses of the Allied Sovereigns as they pranced at the head of their armies

I saw them again in the month of May following when Louis XVIII had entered the Tuilleries dancing under the windows of this palace and howling Long live our legitimate King¹

Then because their legitimate king ventured to hold an opinion different to theirs because he had

a mind to restore to his friends, as a reward for their sufferings during the long exile which they had shared with him, the estates of which they had been robbed, and because he wished—a pious and noble sentiment—to build a tomb for the remains of Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette, I heard some Parisians lamenting that a Bourbon had been restored to them and regretting Father Violet, as the soldiers used to call the Emperor

And when Father Violet returned to Paris in March 1815, I saw them crowding round him on the Place du Carrousel, deafening him with their cries of joy and of love, swearing to die for him to the last man

Vows which last a hundred days A hundred days later, the Parisians had once more ceased loving Napoleon, to bestow their affection afresh on Louis XVIII On July 8th, 1815, they were once more dancing at the Tuileries under the windows of their legitimate king This did not prevent them, some years later, in June 1821, from beginning the July revolution over again on a small scale, on the boulevards, to shouts of "Long live the Charter"

But enough, I could fill a volume with an account of all the changes of front which I have seen in the Parisians And besides, I am preaching to people who are already converted, I imagine My readers know, as well as I do, what to think of a people, of whom some writer, whose name I forget, said that it would be the first in the world, "if it could only make

up its mind once for all about what it likes and what it wants

One morning in the year 1837 my servant came into my bedroom which is also my study and informed me that an old friend wished to speak to me An old friend! That was enough to make me go down and meet my visitor And so I did although I had a secret suspicion as to the claim When a man has made a name all sorts of friends spring up around him friends whom he doesn't know and whom he doesn't want to know

I found a poorly dressed old man standing in the centre of my drawing room

Good day my dear Paul de Kock he said holding out his hand

And as I did not respond for the simple reason that I did not recognize the man who wanted to shake hands with me in the least he continued

Oh I see I understand it's so long since we met last You don't remember me that's certain You you are always the same but then you you are still quite a young man whilst I—I shall be seventy two next month Alas yes poor old Villeneuve is on the eve of his nice seventy second birthday

'Villeneuve!' Oh I beg your pardon my friend Pardon me for not having recognized you

No offence I must have changed so much during the fifteen years that I have been absent from Paris The fact is that during these fifteen years

I haven't eaten beefsteak with potatoes, every day
At the outside I have had potatoes without beef-
steak every day ”

“You have been unlucky ”

“I have been it and am so still You see, my feathers correspond with my song I have all my wardrobe on my back, and it's not very elegant, is it? Ah, far off is the day when I used to be called the elegant Villeneuve But, to begin with—perhaps you may remember it—my wife died in 1831, and that quite disorganized my life Not that my wife was a woman of much order No, economy and Madame Villeneuve never lived under the same roof But all the same, she kept me on the curb, and prevented me from making a fool of myself—headstrong as I was For instance, if she had lived, I should never have left the Ambigu-Comique. Oh, do you remember, it was I who played the leading part in your first piece at the Ambigu?”

“Oh, I remember it very well ”

“*Madame de Valnoir*, a good little melodrama, upon my word, for a beginning And at the end of the first performance the audience wanted to carry you in triumph because of a certain sentence, which it was thought contained an allusion—”

“Which never existed And where do you come from, Villeneuve?”

“I have just come up from the country I have dragged my gaiters almost everywhere during the last fifteen years—falling lower and lower as I grew

older I used to play leading parts in Bordeaux and now people will hardly employ me as letter carrier at the theatres at Meaux or Coulommiers. And you my dear Paul de Koek. It's different with you you are happier than ever to day.

I have worked very hard

'Yes yes you have made a name as a novelist I know that. Oh I have read several of your books in the country. Amongst others *La Maison Blanche*. It's excellent, and what a fine melodrama one could make of it. I say you are not vexed with me for having called on you as a very old acquaintance?

Certainly not. But what is your object in returning to Paris? Do you hope to—'

To get on the stage again? Oh no I'm too old. Oh I don't deceive myself I am too old. No manager could want me to day. My ambition—and I have some friends with influence—is to get admitted into an establishment of a very different kind. You see I am seventy two years old the right age—

And what is this establishment?

Why Bicetre of course. There at least I shan't starve.

Poor Villeneuve! Come down to an asylum

Here my friend said I slipping a louis into his hand here's something to help you to live till you get into Bicetre

He looked at the gold as if he wished to kiss it

Thank you he said. You are good I expected it of you. Ah, the sight of this yellow boy

makes me feel quite young again, upon my word. Will you let me call on you again, to present my respects, before I go into the asylum"

"With the greatest pleasure"

"Thank you once more, *au revoir*"

The old actor went off Eleven o'clock was striking, so I lunched and went out It was my custom, at that time, to go and read the papers at the Café de l'Ambigu, every day after lunch The Café de l'Ambigu was a restaurant which in those days was kept by a man called Quiney, whose talents as a cook were as much admired by connoisseurs, as his conjugal felicity was envied The fact is that if the dishes prepared by Quiney were excellent, his wife, whose business it was to write out the bills at the desk, was pretty, too pretty No rose without a thorn It was rumoured that Quiney was as jealous as a tiger about his charming wife Othello, a restaurant-keeper! Othello forced to watch a sauce with one eye and a gallant with the other Othello-Quiney must have suffered

As I had lunched, I went into the café part of the establishment There were never many people there in the morning, and I could read what I wanted to read in peace and quiet I had already crossed the threshold of this room, and had already picked up a newspaper, when a joyous voice called out to me

"Hullo, Hullo! Paul de Kock You are doing the same as I, dear friend, you have come to take a cup of coffee after your lunch"

I turned round sharply and I admit, was petrified. It was none other than Villeneuve Villeneuve the old actor, to whom I had just given alms I find him a few minutes after I had given him money to provide himself with the necessaries of life indulging himself in luxuries, and thus found out he makes a joke of it and doesn't mind calling out to me.

I thought it so strong that I couldn't say a word Villeneuve however, did not seem to mind my silence and having sipped his drop of coffee he paid the waiter and went out saying as he passed me with a familiar nod

Au revoir my dear Paul de Kock'

Quiney entered the room just as Villeneuve left it
Has that old gentleman been lunching here? I asked

Yes

'What sort of a lunch did he have—may I ask?'

Oh a fairly good lunch and between ourselves his order rather surprised me for the old man doesn't look up to much Oysters a fillet with olives a fried sole some Roquefort and a bottle of Moulin à vent It ran up to eight francs But why do you ask me Monsieur de Kock? Do you know the old gentleman?

'Yes I know him a little. He's an old actor But my question was of no importance Thank you Monsieur Quiney

It was too much He had spent eight francs on his lunch and with the influence of all his friends

all his future prospects reduced themselves to a cell in Bicêtre "Go and give alms to such humbugs," I muttered

But after-thoughts pacified me Great and small, rich and poor, all artists—it is notorious—don't look on life, and never will look on it, like the ruck of martyrs of middle-class existence On the eve of breaking the black bread of charity, Villeneuve had wished to eat the white bread of luxury for the last time And why not? What right had I to reproach him this last pleasure, because I had given him a miserable twenty-franc piece? I was sorry to have given him a cold look I will wager that if I had given him a smile, he would have been delighted to have treated me—as a return favour—to a drop of coffee with my money.

CHAPTER VI

A pause — My first success — *Georgette ou la Vie du tabellion* — Madame de Saint Ihar — The Marais soirées — A garret — How romantic situations arise — Hubert the bookseller in the woollen galleries of the Palais Royal — The first money received — *Frère Jacques* — *Mon cousin Paymond* — At Ladvocat's house — Chateaubriand — *Guitar ou le mauvais sujet* Peacock bricks from the Prudes — A duel with a chemist — A love adventure — Goose Turkey or Chicken — How the adventure was fated to end — A gallant who bolts at full speed — Nicolas Barbi — A visit to Pigault Lebrun — Ladvocat again — Charles Nodier and Zozo — The book seller with the truffles — Hippolyte Souverain the miller — M. Alexandre Dumas fils — Baudry — Lachapelle — Alexandre Cadot — How we dined at his house — Sartorius — A publisher of whom I won't speak —

In the preceding five chapters which in accordance with the plan I made in beginning to write begin in 1793 and finish in 1815 and represent in some sort the first part of my Memoirs I have initiated you if not day by day, at least almost year by year into all the things which happened from my childhood and the earliest days of my youth and which I thought might interest you Henceforth I shall make more rapid strides over the field of my sou-

venirs, firstly because it is not the history of my life that I am writing here (my life—I am thankful to say—has been too calm and too matter-of-fact to be of much interest to the public), and secondly because I find that, in stories of this kind, a methodical chronological order of events is as tiresome as it is monotonous and I don't want to be hampered by its observance

Thus, for example, I have told you how I published my first book and how I got my first play acted, well, I shall certainly take good care not to tell you the stories, one after the other, of each of the works, from my pen, which followed, both in the publishers' shops and on the stage, on *My Wife's Child* and *Madame de Valnoir*. Up to date, I have written nearly four hundred volumes, and I have had more than two hundred theatrical pieces acted on the stage, melodramas, dramas, comic operas, pantomimes, comedies and vaudevilles, and you will therefore admit, that were I to try and speak of them all in detail, I should show myself a very vain man and tax your patience in a terrible manner

Accordingly, when I happen to remember an anecdote, referring to such or such a novel, or to such or such a play, or to this person or that, of more or less importance, whom I happened to know, I will set it down. But—it's agreed, is it not?—in this second part, I am not going to keep to a chronological order in writing my Memoirs. They will come, as fancy wills it, the most recent and the earliest. Let

those who love me follow me

Nevertheless I should hold myself altogether wanting in gratitude if, casting aside this resolution for once only I did not at once say who it was to whom I was indebted for the publication of my second novel *Georgette ou La Dîce du tabellion* that is to say my first success is a novelist, the book which brought me out of obscurity Between ourselves *My Wife's Child* had done nothing at all in that direction

And as soon as I have finished writing about a publisher whose name is synonymous in my head and in my heart with all that is gracious kindly and honest I shall killing two birds with one stone sketch a few more of my publishers This is a debt which I owe to these gentlemen I cannot say that in every instance it is a debt of gratitude.

You will remember that I started *Georgette* when I thought that the ball was at my feet and that too soon finding out how baseless were my hopes seeing that nobody bought my first novel I had abandoned all intentions of writing a second one But true it is that he who has drunk will drink and still truer is it that he who has written will write. The success of *Madame de Valnoir* at the Ambigu had no doubt been very pleasant but whilst retaining the wish to continue to write for the stage I felt instinctively that it was not in that branch of literature that I should win fame

So I went back to work on *Georgette*

If *Georgette ou La Nièce du tabellion* was not yet one of my good novels (I speak, of course, to those who allow that I have written good novels), it is evident, nevertheless, that it shows progress over its predecessor. The reason is that in *Georgette* observation has a much larger place than imagination. I had begun to see, as I wrote, that, especially in humorous books, a novelist does much better to copy life than to invent it. Thus, one of the chapters in *Georgette*, the chapter called, *Une Soirée au Marais*, is an exact description of a weekly social gathering which I often used to attend. It was held, as a matter of fact, in the Marais, in the Rue du Pont-aux-Choux, at the house of a certain Madame de Saint-Phar.

What happy hours were those that I spent in this house! For although most of the habitual guests were people by no means amusing, there were also some very pleasant people, especially amongst the ladies. There was dancing, there was music, there were parlour games, at Madame de Saint-Phar's house, and I had fallen in love with a certain young lady—she was of age—called Caroline M., a tall fair girl who only wanted to be loved. Now it happened that one evening, when we were playing hide and seek, Caroline and I had left Madame de St-Phar's apartment and somehow or other had come together at the top of the staircase in a little garret, of which, by a fortunate chance, the door was standing open. For we were very anxious to hide ourselves in an effective

manner my kids love and I And we might be there still—in that ho pitible little room—for I’m hanged if anybody would have thought of looking for us there—if we hadn’t been routed out by the terror of the room a girl who made pale &c They’re at c had gone downstairs to buy something for her supper and as she had no reason to be afraid of thieves she h d left her door open You can imagine the sur prise on her return at finding a young man and a young woman sharing the same chair and so in, eternal love to one another A bourgeois would have screamed the glove n r et full supply I laughed and if I remember rightly was old enough to h h us downstairs to Madame de Saint Phalle’s apartment For we neither of us knew where we were One to es count in the seventh heaven

Georgette ou La Ame du tableau is better than than my *Wife’s Child* but like *My Wife’s Child* Georgette had to put up with the disdain of the publishers and like *My Wife’s Child* also to do time in the cupboard She remained there indeed even longer than the *Child* For four years In four years I readily forgot my first novel But I did not remain idle during these forty eight months I wrote melodramas and vaudevilles One fine day as I was selling the manuscript of a play to Birbi—for I had entered into business relations with the celebrated Nicolis Birbi of the Palais Royal—I suddenly remembered *Georgette* and had the courage to offer it to him

"I don't mean to publish any more novels," he said, "but you can bring me yours and if it's worth printing, I'll introduce you to a colleague who will publish it for you"

This colleague was Hubert, who was in business, in the wooden galleries of the Palais-Royal, a few doors off Nicolas Barba's shop

I can still see Hubert's affable face, when I called on him

"Oh, so you're M. Paul de Kock. Be so good as to take a seat. I have read your novel and I like it very much. I'll put it in hand at once, as soon as we have come to terms. The terms must be low, as you see I can't pay a big price in a first transaction. But if, as I expect, *Georgette* goes off well, I'll make you a better offer for your next book. Oh, we shall agree all right, you will see."

And I too, I was sure that we should agree. We were already agreed, since he had read my novel and 'liked it very much.' Oh, he had said so himself. And not only was he going to 'put it in hand' at once, but he was going to pay me for it. And he was asking me to write him another. But this man was no publisher, he was a guardian angel, the guardian angel of young authors. If he hid his wings it was so as not to frighten them.

Ah, when I left his shop, with half the price of the sale of *Georgette* in my pocket—for we signed the agreement at once and he paid me half the price agreed upon on the spot (a price which I can tell you,

I did not bargain about)—the galleries of the Palais Royal were not lofty enough for me I struck the roofs with my forehead I had a publisher who paid me Later on in life I sold my novels at a good price. *L'Amant de la Lune* especially, a novel in ten volumes was bought cash down by Baudry for twenty thousand francs Well these twenty large notes which I spread out on my table did not give me as much pleasure as the few louis which I received that day from Hubert. I wanted both to keep them for ever—as the precious firstfruits of a labour which I loved—and to spend them all at once, in a feast of thanksgiving I did not spend them all at once and I did not keep them but both love and friendship shared in my good fortune. Miss Caroline, my lady love of hide and seek received a turquoise ring and Maricot, Paris and two other of my friends the brothers C——z had an excellent dinner with me at my expense at Beauvilliers We drank the health of *Georgette* and of Hubert. Is that a newly married couple? asked an old Paul Pry who was sitting at the next table ‘Not yet sir’ answered Maricot very seriously Hubert and *Georgette* are only engaged at present, but their marriage will soon take place and we hope that they will be very happy and that they will have many children So be it said old Paul Pry So be it said we in chorus

After *Georgette* Hubert published *Gustave ou le Maurais Sujet* and then *Frère Jacques* and then *Mon Voisin Raymond* which everybody thinks my

best novel Chateaubriand, who although he was a poet, did not consider it below his dignity to laugh (in which respect he differed from Lamartine) did me the honour one day to compliment me in person on this novel It was three or four months before the July Revolution I was at Ladvocat's, the publisher's, when M de Chateaubriand came in I was just leaving, when Lavocat motioning to me to stay, said to the author of *Atala*

"Monsieur de Chateaubriand, will you allow me to introduce to you the author of a book, which, as you have often told me, you consider as one of the most amusing, the merriest, and the most truly Gallic books you have ever read, the author of *Mon Voisin Raymond?*"

"Monsieur Paul de Kock," cried Chateaubriand, stepping up to me with a charming smile "Why I'm delighted to make your acquaintance, sir Yes, indeed, *Mon Voisin Raymond* is a delightful novel, one of the truest and wittiest pictures of Parisian life that has ever been written But that's not the only book of yours that I have read, sir, I think that I have read most of your works and, though I did not like them all as well as *Mon Voisin Raymond*, I am glad to be able to say, at least, that I noticed humour in them all—rather violent humour perhaps, in places, but never gross Go on as you have done, and I can prophesy that you will have your place amongst French novelists"

People may accuse me perhaps, after reading the

above, of smacking my lips too complacently over the honey of an illustrious writer But if I have never retorted on the bitter criticisms of which I have often been the object and if I do not bear the slightest ill feeling at the remembrance of these criticisms may I not be excused to day for relating an incident of my literary life of which I have the right to be proud and which till now I have only told to my intimate friends Besides at least I think so one only writes one's Memoirs for those of the public who take an interest in the man because they like the author So my readers must not blame me for telling this anecdote about Chateaubriand On the contrary it shows them that they are not so very ill advised in liking novels which Chateaubriand found meritorious

Georgette ou La Niece du tabellion sold well but it was *Gustave ou le Marin's Sujet* especially which got me talked about Not in terms of praise by everybody Oh no Many persons found the book rather too coarse but I for my part declare and I do so without a blush that neither at that time nor later did I feel the slightest remorse for my crime To speak frankly come can you expect a novel called *Gustave ou le Marin's Sujet* to have anything in common with *Telemaque*—unless it be where the son of Ulysses goes to chat, on the sly in the caves with the beautiful nymph Eucharis? Eh eh it can't be denied in that respect Telemachus has a very

close resemblance to my *Gustave* Well, the publication of this book raised a storm of alarmed prudishness against me, not only in the newspapers, but also amongst certain of my acquaintances What was I doing? Good Heavens! Why Pigault's *La Folie Espagnole* was but a book by Ducray-Duminil as compared to *Gustave* L'Aretin had come to life again, and the name of him was Paul de Kock At my mother's house, where I sometimes sacrificed myself to the delights of a game of boston at farthing points, a lady, who six weeks later was caught by her husband *in flagrante delicto* with one of hei cousins refused to sit opposite me I filled her with terror, she said Elsewhere, a mature and very ugly lady, whom I had asked, out of sheer politeness to dance with me, fainted when I took her hand She said, next day, that it had seemed to her that my fingers were burning coals Like Satan's fingers, neither more nor less I laughed at all this nonsense, but one day, when a gentleman remarked, in my presence, in an artist's studio, that "if he were the Government, he would have *Gustave* burnt on the place of execution, as an obscene book, and would throw the author, for the rest of his days, into the deepest dungeon," my blood boiled so forcibly that that gentleman had reason to regret his words I gave him the best box on the ears that he had ever received in his life

We exchanged cards My adversary—whom we will call Durand, for he is living still and, if I am not

mistaken carries on his business somewhere—my adversary was a chemist Where does prudishness not take shelter? The next day at eight o'clock in the morning we met in the Bois de Boulogne Paris and Maricot were my seconds M Durand's seconds must have been colleagues of his at least they looked like people who were more accustomed to handle other instruments than pistols For pistols had been decided upon for the duel

I had been walking up and down for a quarter of an hour waiting for the weapons to be loaded and although I was not at all anxious about the result of the duel I was beginning to find the preliminaries much too long when I suddenly saw Paris and Maricot coming up to me splitting their sides with laughter

What's the matter? I asked.

The matter, indeed, cried Maricot. Your duel is over and done

Over and done, said Paris

Et le combat finit faute de combattants

What M Durand?

M Durand has taken to his heels

But his seconds

Prudent men they showed him the way

'You're joking?'

Not in the least To begin with when I took the pistols out of their case one of M Durand's seconds—a little yellow chap—suddenly turned such a

hue of green that neither Pâris nor myself were in the least surprised when he begged to be allowed to step aside for a moment The other second showed less emotion and remained whilst I loaded the first pistol But when I was beginning on the second he suddenly said ‘Perhaps Achilles is ill’ (It appears that the name of the gentleman who turned such a rich green, is Achilles) ‘I must go and see if he doesn’t want me’ And without waiting for any answer, he ran off in the same direction as the first Up comes M Durand, who from afar has seen his seconds disappear one after the other ‘Where have my friends gone to?’ says he ‘My word, sir,’ says Pâris, ‘we don’t know, but we fancy that your friends are not much accustomed to duelling and that if you want this encounter to come off, you had better screw up their courage a bit with a word of serious advice’

“‘Oh,’ muttered M Durand, who, whilst Pâris was speaking, had been looking at the pistols with a haggard eye ‘Oh, the sight of these deadly weapons has upset my friends Very well, gentlemen, be good enough to wait a minute or two I’ll go and fetch them and I’ll bring them back Oh, don’t be afraid, I’ll bring them back in a minute or two’”

Maricot paused in his story and burst out into a peal of laughter in which Pâris joined

“And what then,” said I, laughing also—so contagious was their mirth “I suppose M Durand means to keep his word and bring back his seconds”

“You bet he doesn’t,” said Maricot “Principal and

seconds are far off by now, unless all three of them have rolled into a ditch. You can imagine that after what M. Durand said neither of us stayed where we were. We wanted to see what he was going to do. So we followed him some way behind!

And you saw

We saw your adversary galloping after his friends three or four hundred paces from this thicket along an avenue which leads to Paris. When he caught up with them he took them by the arms and all three bolted off together without once looking round in the direction of the capital.

It's not possible!"

It's so possible that I'm off now to put the pistols which we left lying on the grass over there back into their case. And then—you can trust my experience in these matters Paul—we will set about getting some breakfast, and that without loss of time. After that if you want to give your formidable enemy the usual quarter of an hour's grace you may do so. But trust me it'll only be a waste of time. You know what our forefathers used to nickname chemists—

The kneeling musketeers. M. Durand won't fight. He can't fight. Come if chemists were to fight who would work the syringe?

This is the only duel that I ever fought and I don't regret it for I think duelling absurd and I should have been very sorry indeed to have killed a chemist. If this chemist had killed me—to speak like Calno—I should have regretted it all my life.

However, I did not always get abuse and quarrels out of *Gustave, the Bad Boy*. All readers are not alike, thank goodness. Some like what others don't. And it is probable that "the others" were in the minority in this case, seeing that the first edition of my novel was sold out in four months.

At any rate many ladies were very gracious to me after reading *Gustave*. Ladies, evidently, who liked bad boys. There used to be ladies of that kind in those days.

And as to that here is a little story.

One morning, one of Hubert's clerks handed me a note which had been left for me the day before at the shop, by a servant-girl. It ran as follows:

"My Author,

"As I don't know your address, I write to you at your publisher's. I have read your *Gustave* book, and that made me think I'd like to know you personally. Will you come and sup with me the day after to-morrow at my house? There'll only be the two of us, as you may suppose. I know it's not the right thing for women to invite men, but I am a woman of the good sort, so, if you feel like it, walk up and down, in front of the Porte Saint-Martin the day after to-morrow, Thursday, at 7 o'clock in the evening, when you'll see, coming from the Rue Saint-Martin, a servant woman, about fifty years old, wearing a Norman cap, and holding a feather-brush in one hand and a broom in the other. That'll be my servant. You'll go up to her and say 'I am the

gentleman She will take you to the right place Ask yourself If it will help you to make up your mind I may tell you that I am a widow of twenty eight and every man who meets me stares at me There you are.

My Christian name is
Josephine

A good middle class woman I could see from the style of the letter and the number of faults of spelling which adorned it that it had not been written by a duchess But a widow of twenty eight and all the men stare at me' I was young fond of adventures of all kinds and so I did not take much time in asking myself

On the next day but one at the appointed hour I was at the rendez vous

The Normandy serving woman soon arrived carrying the emblems which had been agreed upon a feather brush and a broom I walked up to her and whispered in her ear I am the gentleman She looked at me and her eyes seemed to express astonishment. She had no doubt expected to see a very different sort of gentleman However she nodded and said

All right! All right! If you're the gentleman, I'll walk ahead and you'll follow me

I should think you will walk ahead said I to myself Although it was dark I was not at all tempted by the prospect of chatting on the way

with this old hag of a peasant woman

We did not go far, only to where the Square des Arts et Metiers now stands in the Rue Saint-Martin. The house was entered by an alley, with a *rôtisserie* on one side and a grocery on the other.

"Here we are," said the servant. "Follow me a bit longer."

"Is it high up?" I asked, as I laid my hand on the balustrade of a dark, dirty and winding staircase.

"No, it's on the first landing. Are you frightened of going up stairs?"

"I am not frightened, but I can't breathe."

"I can quite understand that."

Now I should like to know, why "she could quite understand that." There was no doubt about it, the old woman could not stand me at any price.

She brought me through an antichamber, into a parlour, which, without being elegant, spoke of decent competency on the part of its owner. It was furnished with a suite of mahogany, upholstered in velvet, a clock with a copper group upon it, standing between two china vases, filled with artificial flowers, and there were some family portraits on the walls.

"I'll go and tell the missus that you've come," said the servant.

I looked at the family portraits. Vulgar and ugly faces, and what bad painting! These pictures must have cost about twelve shillings each, including the frames. I hold that one can judge of people's stand-

ing by the pictures which they hang up in their homes Madame Josephine must be of all middle class women the most middle-class

But now the door through which the servant had gone out opened again I was just looking at the portrait of a huge fellow with a Newgate collar beard and a gold chain as thick as one's little finger, which folded twice a round his waistcoat—the husband of my widow no doubt. At the sound of the door I turned round and found myself face to face with Madame Josephine. She was a big motherly woman not ugly and very fresh looking but so fat so very fat Oh there could be no doubt that the gentleman with the gold chain was her defunct husband

Did my face show the vague fear that I had felt at the sight of such corpulence? Be that as it may it is certain that Madame Josephine made a slight grimace when she saw me

There was a silent pause which was very awkward for both of us At last she said

'You are M Paul de Kock'

'Yes Madame'

'It's funny!'

'What's funny?'

'Well from your book I had thought you—well I had thought you quite different'

'Oh indeed And what sort of man did you think I was? Tell me all about it Madame.'

'Well I believed you—I thought you—'

"You thought I should turn out a big young fellow of six feet, with broad shoulders, a quantity of hair, and a blue-black beard"

"Oh, I didn't absolutely want a blue-black beard, but you, you, you can't be very strong, eh?"

"Oh, I beg your pardon, Madame I am hardly ever ill"

"Strange, you look so thin But you must admit, at least, that your sight is bad"

Madame Joséphine alluded to my spectacles I had worn spectacles from the time I was a youth until the age of thirty-five It was only in 1828, that, my sight having greatly improved, I was able to dispense with an artificial aid which, I admit, does not improve one's personal appearance

I bit my lips My widow irritated me with her questions It was no amorous woman that I had before me, but a medical inspector

"Goodness gracious, Madame," said I, sharply enough, "it's true that I am very short-sighted, but my spectacles don't prevent me from eating, nor from courting the ladies, and, if I usually keep them on at table, I also take them off elsewhere"

Madame Joséphine burst out laughing

"You are quite right," she said, "and it's stupid of me to be surprised because you don't look like a Hercules There are men who look like Hercules, and who, none the less, are not particularly vigorous. My husband, for instance To look at him, one would have thought him capable of

knocking down a wall with one blow of his fist whilst as a matter of fact he couldn't even knock down a lath and plaster concern I could roll him up in one hand Besides I suppose one can't expect an author to be built like a market porter Let's go to supper *mon petit* Are you hungry?

Hum! Hum!

Oh your appetite will come whilst you're eating Come along to supper

So saying Madame Josephine dragged me—there's no other word for it—into the dining room where supper was laid There was a roast goose big enough to give indigestion to a whole regiment Near the table was a basket filled with bottles

Do you like goose? asked my widow

Hum! Hum!

Hum! Hum! again Perhaps you would have preferred a turkey?

Oh

Don't mind saying so If you prefer turkey I'll tell Gervaise to go down stairs and pick us one out or perhaps a chicken Yes eh? you would prefer a chicken I say Gervaise

So because I had no wish either for a goose or for a turl ey a chicken was to be picked out for me These words were a revelation The roasting shop which I had noticed down stairs belonged to Madame Josephine I had made the conquest of a *rotissoire* And the conquest was an imaginary one into the bargain—for as a matter of fact—Oh my spectacles

had chilled the fat shopwoman indeed

Gervaise came running in She smiled ironically on hearing that she was to substitute a less substantial bird for what had been served "No breath, no appetite,"—so I interpreted her smile—"What a wretched acquaintance Madame has made, to be sure"

The fact is that the more I looked at Madame Joséphine, the less—though it was eating my own words—did I feel anxious to show her that a man may wear spectacles and yet be a very ardent lover This *rôtisseur* was not a woman, she was a phenomenon She was the Hottentot Venus of the Rue Saint-Martin It would take one at least an hour merely to cover her hand with kisses

How was I to escape?

She had placed me at her side at table

"We can drink a drop, whilst waiting for the chicken," said she, filling my glass up to the brim

"Oh thanks," I murmured, "but we've plenty of time"

"Won't you drink glasses with me?"

"Oh I beg your pardon But its not my habit, before eating to—to—"

"Oh, indeed Now I, I can drink off a bottle while the bread is soaking in the soup, and without turning a hair either Drink it up It's a good tap, my wine, it's Mâcon And so your business is making books? Does it bring in anything, a business of that kind? No, eh? There's more money to be made in

trade But where do you find all the nonsense that you shove into your books?

'I do not find it People give it to me
What sort of people?

Oh all sorts of people People whom I meet every where Oh there's no lack of persons to supply me with plots and characters for my novels'

Dear dear just fancy! I had imagined that you simply copied your novels out of old books which you bought at the second hand bookstalls on the quays By changing them a bit by freshening them up—

So she was stupid into the bargain Not only was she enormous this *rotissoiseuse* but stupid My mind was soon made up

Gervaise came back

Madame there's no more chicken so I have brought up half a turkey instead

Very well Very well So much the worse eh, *mon petit* You'll eat turkey for once in a way won't you?

Certainly Madame but first—

So saying I rose from the table

'What's the matter?' said Madame Josephine
Do you want anything?

'Yes if you don't mind I should like to be alone for—five minutes—in your drawing room

'In my drawing room! What do you want to go into my drawing room for?

Because it's just the place for me to write a few

lines in my pocket-book ”

“Oh, it’s to write I had thought that—”

“Please excuse me You see, in my line of business, when a thought strikes me, it is imperative that I should note it down at once ”

“Very well Go, go I’ll carve this half turkey whilst you are jotting down your thoughts ”

To enter the drawing-room—where I had left my hat—to clear it at a bound and the antichamber at another, to get down the staircase taking four steps at a stride, to bolt up the alley and, once in the street, to rush off at the top speed of my legs, all that was, for me, a matter of a few seconds

My *rôtisseur* could hardly have got the wing off the half turkey, before I had reached the Porte-Saint-Martin theatre, vowing by all the saints, never in the future to let myself be so easily lured by the *billetts doux* of excellent shopwomen

A woman of a good sort is all right, but she must not be of too good a sort

And Madame Joséphine was really much too good a sort

Having, in these retrospective remarks about my various publishers, spoken about Hubert, I must say a few words about Nicolas Barba, in spite of the fact that, in consequence of certain disreputable occurrences—about which I don’t care to speak—which took place some years before his death, and in which

—to my thinking—he was badly mixed up my relations with him came suddenly to an end

For the rest Nicolas Barba was a good fellow *fat Barba* as people used to call him and rightly so seeing that in stature and bulk he was a giant. He was rather a chatterbox rather a boaster but often witty both as a boaster and a chatterbox. Pigault Lebrun was the hero he worshipped and indeed it is so rare to hear a tradesman express any gratitude to those who have made his fortune, that we could listen without weariness to Barba, as he kept on talking about his dear author and friend. And he did more than merely talk about his friendship for Pigault he gave him a practical proof of it by paying him all his life beginning from the day on which he published his fortieth volume an annual allowance of twelve hundred francs. Forty eight pounds. The smallness of the sum makes you smile but let me tell you that forty years ago that seemed a very respectable sum.

I frequently met Pigault Lebrun when I was a young man at Nicolas Barba's house in the Cour des Fontaines but he always treated me so coldly that in spite of myself—for I held his talent in the very highest esteem—I was forced to limit my relations with him to those of simple politeness. However one day in the autumn of 1832 as I was walking with my mother at La Celle Saint Cloud where he was then living I accepted an offer made me by Nicolas Barba to make a call on Pigault Lebrun.

He was then quite an old man—he must have been about eighty—but he was vigorous still On this occasion, he received me very cordially

"You are carrying on my work," said he to me "I don't read you novels It's long since I read anything, but I'm told that they are very full of fun That's right, make people laugh, it's much more difficult than to make people cry"

Nicolas Barba was for many years a constant visitor to my modest home When, after 1830, I had bought the first little house I had, in the Romainville woods, hardly a week passed without his coming and spending a whole day with me He used to come on foot, from the Palais-Royal, leaning on his crook-handled stick, with which he used to amuse my children, taking them to the neighbouring fields, and rifling the trees—at the risk of getting into trouble with the country constable—of apples and nuts He used to tell my wife and me his life, and his adventures as a soldier He had been a *chasseur* in the Boulonnais regiment, a circumstance of which he was not a little proud He used to tell us of his adventures with Prince Jérôme, escapades which supplied the material for the famous novel called *Mon Oncle Thomas*

A cloud came over the sky—a cloud which too soon broke into a tempest over my head—and farewell to Nicolas Barba, a last farewell I was sorry for it, for I loved him Perhaps, later on, he also thought, with regret, of my little house, of my child-

ren of our chits Well well ! I had already learned by experience that *vows* of friendship are no more graven in brass than the *vows* of love and, for years as I passed before Nicolis Barbis shop I had but to turn aside my head I may call that a chronic *wit* of the neck It is not a mortal affection

I had but few business relations with Ladvocat the famous publisher of a quantity of Memoirs from which he extracted heap, of gold—which he was stupid enough to scatter to the winds All I did for him was to write an article for his book *Les Cent et un* but I take pleasure in thinking of him as a pleasant gentleman, who neither in voice nor in manners had anything of the tradesman about him And is not this praise in itself a criticism? Would it not have been better for Ladvocat if he had been less a gentleman and a better business man and thus to have escaped becoming *dress-maker* is a last resource? For as we all know this is how Ladvocat crowned his career He passed from the publishing business into a dress making shop There is no evidence that he in person took the measures for the dresses which were cut out in his work shops but it is quite certain that he used to preside over their making up and more than that that he used to boast of it.

I have mentioned that it was at his house that I had one day the honour of meeting with Chateaubriand Another day whilst I was talking in his

shop with Merle,—the author of *Le Cr-dvant Jeune Homme* and of *Le Bourgmestre de Saardam*, besides being the editor of the theatrical sheet *La Quotidienne*, and who, like Martainville, was both a rabid Royalist and a writer of talent,—I saw a man come in, a rather tall man, with very bright eyes, a somewhat big nose, and a satirical mouth. Ladvocat leaving Merle and me, rushed up to him with both hands stretched out and cried

"My dear old Nodier! How do you do?"

"Do you know Charles Nodier?" asked Merle

"Not at all."

"Well he knows you and has known you a long while"

"Bah! Who told you that?"

"He himself"

"And how does he know me? Where has he seen me?"

"Somewhere where you often went formerly, it appears. Wait a bit, he'll tell you about it himself."

Merle went up to Nodier and drawing his attention to me with a look, whispered some words in his ear. Thereupon the author of *La Fée aux Miettes* came up to me and said

"Merle has told you the truth, Monsieur Paul de Kock, I have had the pleasure of knowing you for the last twenty years."

"Indeed, sir? And would you be so kind as to tell me——"

"Where we used to meet—not once, but a hun-

dred two hundred times Very willingly This is 1833 is it not Very well in the days when the Boulevard du Temple was still the Boulevard du Temple that is to say the most typical place in Paris with its booths of mountebanks who never left the spot its wax works shows its freaks and its menageries don't you remember a certain clown half Jo crisse half Harlequin whose tricks were the funniest things one could imagine?

Zozo?

Zozo That's it, Zozo Well isn't it true that from 1810 to 1820 whilst you were still quite a young man you used to be one of Zozo's most faithful admirers?

Quite true I lived in the quarter and I don't think that two days ever passed without my going to see the funny fellow '

Well I too though I didn't live in the Marais I was so fond of Zozo—what am I saying I worshipped him—that I never let two days pass without going to split my sides with laughing at his fooleries Well as one of his audience I got to know the faces of all the other spectators who by laughing as heartily as myself seemed to me the most intelligent people there So don't be surprised that when a month or two ago Merle pointed you out to me at the theatre I should have exclaimed That Paul de Kock! Why I have known him for centuries! And though I have never exchanged one word with him I'll wager he's a very good fellow He knows how

to laugh'"

Charlieu, the publisher of the illustrated quarto edition of my novels, had many points of resemblance, both in manners and way of speaking, with Ladvocat M de Charlieu was typical of the aristocratic tradesman He had horses and carriages, a townhouse and a house in the country He had a large private fortune of his own and was very successful in business and so could indulge in luxuries without being charged with extravagance He owned large estates in the south and never failed to send me, three or four times every winter, some splendid pots of game, or succulent foies gras, stuflshed with black truffles which were found on his estate And I won't deny that I was very pleased to be in business relations with a publisher who had truffles on his estate and who sent me some in pâtes de foies gras

I am greedy and I admit it Is it a vice? Yes, no doubt, in the eyes of those who are not And I will say further that I don't know anything more irritating at table than to see a lot of people, who like nothing and will eat nothing What does that mean, after all? Nothing, but that their stomachs are out of order And to be careful, because one's stomach is out of order, shows prudence, but not a virtuous disposition

It's the same with those persons, who, when you ask them to cut in for a game of *bouillotte* or whist,

want of a bed time. No think you I never
play'd ! However to bed & done with the
Oh I have a horrid grippe " he said " I
have got them to the quinsy & would not
what a silly thing the are. Don't you tell any
of the others in the office about it ? " said he
He often called me to his office & told me
why to say " such & such a thing was
done up to him before he came in & do
not stirr up any trouble. And replied " Well
I will not say so. You are right you know
what you tell.

Gribble had the very next day to get
it however it did not last long & up
recovered in a few hours. I wish
to thank you all of my friends. Let me assure
you he is happily recovered & will be
also in his day & night bed & now at
the celebration of the Blue Ribbon Lecture
at New Haven in which he has been selected
as the best lecturer. Here is a specimen lecture. The
first one of which I shall give you in this way. He
has written two more & is at the third. I had
written another for two volumes. But a recent
vision that he is so low & a little aged
encouraged the poor old *Ge M* to give up to find that
so many & making him, & costs to make a three
volume book of it.

I went to his office

Yes said he " *Ge M* will be in three

volumes But what does that matter to you?"

"It matters—The matter is that I sold you only two volumes, and that I am surprised—"

"Surprised at what Let's argue it out, if you please Did I, or did I not, pay you the price you asked me for your two volumes?"

"You did"

"Very well then, because, like a clever miller, I can make three millings of the corn I have bought with my hard cash instead of two, where's the harm? What is mine is mine, and I am entitled to make the most profitable use I can of it I defy you to prove the contrary"

I made no answer, for all that good old Souverain's arguments appeared to me of a very specious nature, but, when we next did business together, I took care to act, as I thought, in a way which would secure to me my due share of all the "millings" which he would get from my corn!

This time, it was *L'Amour cui transi* that I sold to him "In *three* volumes," said I, as I handed him the manuscript

"All right," answered he without turning a hair "So I'll pay you for *three* volumes"

And pay me he did But out of my *three* volumes, he made *four* As a publisher, Souverain, was decidedly too skilful a miller for me I declared myself beaten

A clever story-teller, for he has travelled much, a charming talker—except when he is talking about

certain religious and social matters which are not at all in my line—Souverain although he no longer publishes for me has continued to be a welcome guest at my house Two or three years ago he mentioned to me that Alexandre Dumas *fils* was anxious to make my acquaintance

I should like nothing better I said than to make Dumas acquaintance

Then will you come and lunch with me one of these days?

With pleasure

A week later I received a note asking me to come on the next day but one at twelve o'clock to the Notta restaurant at the corner of the boulevard and the Faubourg Poissonniere I kept the appointment and found Souverain waiting for me and very soon afterwards M Alexandre Dumas *fils* joined us I pass over the compliments which he was good enough to address to me—courtesy as well as intelligence are innate in the Dumas family as I knew from the few conversations I had had with Dumas the elder—but what I will not pass over—because it amused me very much—is the study which Dumas made of me at table whilst I was making one of him I have always had a good appetite and—think Heaven—have one still and you will remember that I have confessed that I am just a little fond of good cheer The consequence is that when I am asked to lunch I do lunch Souverain, as the host gave me a free hand in ordering the lunch on this occasion and I

ordered what I liked, Ostend oysters, *filet au truffes*, a lobster salad, a salmis of partridges, asparagus *en branches*, and, for wines, some Sauterne to begin with, followed by some old Burgundy. Dumas fils, who ate as little as a bird and mixed his wine with some mineral water which he had brought with him in his carriage, watched me at work, smiling and exclaiming every now and then

"That's it, oh ! that's just it. That's the true Paul de Kock, the *bon-vivant* as I had imagined him. It's superb."

But where the mirth of my young *confidere* really broke out was later on, when, at dessert, he—and Souverain as well, having said that they had had enough, I remarked, that as for me, I shouldn't mind a trifle more,—a slice of plumpudding with rum, for instance, and that to help the cheese down, I would willingly drink a glass of champagne

"Champagne ! Plumpudding," cried Alexandre Dumas fils. "Come, now I have my Paul de Kock complete."

I said nothing, because—I am sure of it—he had not spoken with any bad intention, but, in all truth, what a splendid opportunity the author of *La Dame aux Camélias* had given me, had I wanted to retort

I might have said "Yes, sir, you have your Paul de Kock complete at seventy, just as I have my Dumas fils already complete at forty. Each shows his own character, according to his epoch. I go on eating and drinking, you have already stopped eating

and drinking And passing from physical to intellectual matters from the stomach to the heart I will wager that here also my old age shows superior to your youth for I still believe in all that it is sweet and comforting to believe in in this world whilst you if I am to judge from your writings refuse to believe that there is anything good left

But I repeat it M Alexandre Dumas *fils* had been too kind in his conduct towards me for me to appear vexed at his remark about my person somewhat ironical as it was It's only to day—as a mild act of revenge—that I will allow myself to say something about him Between ourselves I had fancied that meeting Paul de Koch , Dumas *fils* were it but out of curiosity for the past would have been interested in hearing the old novelist talk Now as a matter of fact it was he who talked the whole time all through lunch I put up with it all the more readily since he spoke very well and that I by nature am no great conversationalist But when I next saw Souverain and he asked me how I had enjoyed myself at his *feast* I said Oh ! the *feast* was excellent and M Dumas was charming But tell me I pray, why did he want to make my acquaintance? He did not let me say two words He would have made my acquaintance just as well if you had simply put my portrait in my place at table

Of Baudry, the publisher I have nothing to say,

ordered what I liked, Ostend oysters, *filet au truffe*, a lobster salad, a salmis of partridges, asparagus *en branches*, and, for wines, some Sauterne to begin with, followed by some old Burgundy. Dumas *fil*, who ate as little as a bird and mixed his wine with some mineral water which he had brought with him in his carriage, watched me at work, smiling and exclaiming every now and then

"That's it, oh ! that's just it. That's the true Paul de Kock, the *bon-vivant* as I had imagined him. It's superb."

But where the mirth of my young *confidante* really broke out was later on, when, at dessert, he—and Souverain as well, having said that they had had enough, I remarked, that as for me, I shouldn't mind a trifle more,—a slice of plumpudding with rum, for instance, and that to help the cheese down, I would willingly drink a glass of champagne

"Champagne ! Plumpudding," cried Alexandre Dumas *fil*. "Come, now I have my *Paul de Kock complete*!"

I said nothing, because—I am sure of it—he had not spoken with any bad intention, but, in all truth, what a splendid opportunity the author of *La Dame aux Camélias* had given me, had I wanted to retort

I might have said "Yes, sir, you have your Paul de Kock complete at seventy, just as I have my Dumas *fil*s already complete at forty. Each shows his own character, according to his epoch. I go on eating and drinking, you have already stopped eating

and drinking And passing from physical to intellectual matter , from the stomach to the heart I will write that here also my old age shows superior to your youth for I still believe in all that it is sweet and comforting to believe in in this world whilst you if I am to judge from your writings refuse to believe that there is anything good left

But I repeat it M. Ale ander D. ms fils had been too kind in his conduct toards me for me to appear vexed at his remark about my person some what ironical as it was It's only to-day — a mild act of revenge—that I will allow myself to say more than about him Between ourselves I had fancied that meeting Paul de Koch Dumois *chez* we ate it but out of curiosity for the part would have been interested in hearing the old novelist talk Now as a matter of fact it was he who talked the whole time all through lunch I put up with it all the more readily since he spoke very well and that I by nature am no great conversationalist But when I next saw Souverain and he asked me how I had enjoyed myself at his *feast* I said Oh the feast was excellent and M. Dumois was charming But tell me I pray why did he want to make my acquaintance? He did not let me say two words He would have made my acquaintance just as well if you had simply put my portrait in my place at table.

Of Brudry, the publisher I have nothing to say,

except that he was the first to pay me for my works prices which were proportionate to the profits he anticipated making from them And, as I had not been accustomed to this kind of treatment before, it seemed all the more pleasant, and calls for an acknowledgment on my part in these pages

I will also pass over Lachapelle, who from 1842 to 1844, published several of my novels I remember very little about him, except his aversion to part with his crowns, and his strange physical condition In consequence of a terrible illness he had had, his bones were transparent One could read a newspaper through his body I recollect little else about him

I have more to say about Alexandre Cadot, a worthy excellent man, for whom I have nothing but praise And my son, in contracting a warm friendship with him—a friendship which during ten years has never wavered one instant—has proved to me that my esteem for Cadot was rightly placed, for Henry is not prodigal with his friendship I have only one reproach to make to Cadot—not as a publisher, but as a host—and that is, that when one dines at his house, one is kept at table for six hours at a stretch I remember being present at one dinner, amongst others, in his apartments in the Rue Serpente, together with my son and my daughter, Messieurs de Foudras, Paul Duplessis, and Xavier de Montépin We had sat down to table at six o'clock, and at midnight, when coffee might reason-

ably have been expected, a truffled *poularde* was served. How could one resist the attractions of a truffled chicken even after six hours of knife and fork exercise? We were astonished at its appearing on the table but we ate of it we ate a lot of it and Paul Duplessis a novelist of talent whose recent death was such a sad one * Paul Duplessis who like me was a *belle fourchette* deserves special mention for the way in which he rivalled me in tackling the fowl. But my son who at table somewhat follows the school of M^e Dumas fils and satisfies his appetite almost immediately and who is never thirsty could not help exclaiming

'My word, Cadot this isn't a dinner you're giving us it's a trap you have laid for us. You want to send us home to-morrow as corpses—dead of indigestion.'

At any rate the trap was not a cruel one, and I was joking just now when I accused Cadot of feeding his guests too well. It is certainly better to do that than not to feed them at all as so many hosts that I know are in the habit of doing. I won't name them so they need not be afraid. I don't bear grudges of that sort.

What shall I say of Sartoris my last publisher? For he also was a good and honest man. I say was' for he died recently died like Hubert like Nicolas Barba like Ladvocat like Charlier, Baudry Lachapelle Potter and another whom I have

* He died suddenly in the street of aneurismal rupture

except that he was the first to pay me for my works prices which were proportionate to the profits he anticipated making from them And, as I had not been accustomed to this kind of treatment before, it seemed all the more pleasant, and calls for an acknowledgment on my part in these pages

I will also pass over Lachapelle, who from 1842 to 1844, published several of my novels I remember very little about him, except his aversion to part with his crowns, and his strange physical condition In consequence of a terrible illness he had had, his bones were transparent One could read a newspaper through his body I recollect little else about him

I have more to say about Alexandre Cadot, a worthy excellent man, for whom I have nothing but praise And my son, in contracting a warm friendship with him—a friendship which during ten years has never wavered one instant—has proved to me that my esteem for Cadot was rightly placed, for Henry is not prodigal with his friendship I have only one reproach to make to Cadot—not as a publisher, but as a host—and that is, that when one dines at his house, one is kept at table for six hours at a stretch I remember being present at one dinner, amongst others, in his apartments in the Rue Serpente, together with my son and my daughter, Messieurs de Foudras, Paul Duplessis, and Xavier de Montépin We had sat down to table at six o'clock, and at midnight, when coffee might reason-

ably have been expected a truffled *poularde* was served How could one resist the attractions of a truffled chicken even after six hours of knife and fork exercise? We were astonished at its appearing on the table but we ate of it we ate a lot of it and Paul Duplessis, a novelist of talent, whose recent death was such a sad one * Paul Duplessis who like me was a *belle fourchette* deserves special mention for the way in which he rivalled me in tackling the fowl But my son who at table somewhat follows the school of M Dumas fils and satisfies his appetite almost immediately and who is never thirsty could not help exclaiming

My word Cadot this isn't a dinner you're giving us it's a trap you have laid for us You want to send us home to morrow as corpses—dead of indigestion

At any rate the trap was not a cruel one, and I was joking just now, when I accused Cadot of feeding his guests too well It is certainly better to do that than not to feed them at all as so many hosts that I know are in the habit of doing I won't name them, so they need not be afraid I don't bear grudges of that sort.

What shall I say of Sartorus my last publisher For he also was a good and honest man I say was' for he died recently died like Hubert like Nicolas Barba, like Ladvocat like Charlieu, Baudry, Lachapelle Potter and another whom I have

* He died suddenly in the street of aneurismal rupture

not named and shall not name, holding it useless, if not painful, to speak of a man, who in return for the fortune which he owed to me—a fortune, by the way, which he turned to no good account—never did me anything but injuries Of all my publishers, only two are left whose hands I can shake, Cadot⁺ and Souverain This is one of the penalties of a long career, the ranks thin out around one Friends and enemies disappear And it is enough to remember one's friends without doing one's enemies the honour of a single thought

⁺ Cadot died in April 1870—a few months after Paul de Koch had written these lines

CHAPTER VII

One of the happy periods of my life — My work for the Opera Comique — *Une Nuit au Château* — *Le Philosophe en voyage* — *Les infidèles* — *Le Muletier* — A proposal from Merle — One of my aversions — What Nestor Roqueplan said to me on this subject — A Journey to Ro ny — A visit to the chateau of the Duchesse de Berry — Meeting the Duchess — The little apron — How later on two separate occasions I remembered this little apron — The *foyer* of the Opéra Comique — Garat — Hoffmann — The ever youthful M^e de Saint Georges — Boieldieu — Herold — Florist and composer — Other guests at the *soirées* in the *foyer* of the Opera Comique — Perpignan a censor of the departed school — A way of knowing what is going on in Paris — Story of Piberlo the actor and Mistenflute the painter — The little servant girl — Cuckold beaten and discontented — But philosophic — Perpignan's monomania — I sacrifice my plates — Adolphe Adam — *Les Bergers de Syracuse* — About tobacco — Destruction of the *Theatre Feydeau* — A swan's song — Theatrical managers

One of the periods of my life which I remember with the greatest pleasure is that during which I was writing for the Opera Comique I have always been very fond of music A musician myself how could I help being happy amongst musicians? For reader if you

are not aware of the fact, let me inform you—not without some vanity (one is always very proud of one's little talents)—that I have not only written the words, but the music also, of a number of songs and ditties, which were sung for years at charity concerts and also in public I may mention specially my *Le Concert-Monstre*, which had the honour of being made a quadrille for a full orchestra, by the famous maestro Jullien, at the concerts in the Jardin Turc I may also mention *Le Maître d'Ecole* and *Le Cassier*, which used to be sung with so much gaiety by Levassor and Joseph Kelm

To return to my work for the Opéra-Comique, it is an unfortunate fact that I was not often lucky in my choice of collaborators, and the consequence is, that out of twenty acts which I wrote for this theatre, only one has kept its place on the *répertoire*—*Le Muletier*, which I did in collaboration with Hérold. Even this has not been played often for some time past, although it is a pearl. A pearl as music, I mean, of course. A pearl of which my libretto is nothing but the shell. And Nestor Roqueplan—whilst he was manager of the Opera-Comique—was of the same opinion as myself and all connoisseurs as to the musical merits of *Le Muletier*, for, differing from his predecessors, he mounted it at its revival in a manner worthy of its illustrious author.

My first comic opera, written in 1818, is called *Une Nuit au Château*, for which Mengal, my violin professor, wrote the music. Certainly the music

was not on a par with *Le Muletier* but all the same there were good points about the score of *Une Nuit au Chateau* and it was well received It was acted by Juliet fils Huet Madame Desbrosses and Madame Boulanger My next piece was *Le Philosophe en Voyage* a comic opera in three acts, written in collaboration with the composers Frederic Kreube and Pradher Alas a hundred times alas!—(they are both dead and so I may speak out)—these were two composers who could boast of not possessing a grain of talent Stop Yes Pradher had the talent of being the husband of a delicious artist Delicious as a singer and as a woman A gem to whom Anna Thillon later could alone be compared However as the piece—so it appeared—was interesting, *Le Philosophe en Voyage* ran for a hundred nights but by cutting out every night now a duo now a trio or quartette it ended by becoming nothing but a comedy without music a thing which was only moderately flattering to Kreube and Pradher if I for my part, had no serious objections to make to the proceeding *Les Infidèles* a one act piece, for which Mengal again wrote the music followed and then in the same year (1823), *Le Muletier* sung by Lemonnier Vizentini Fereol Madame Boulanger and the charming Madame Pradher What a success it was I was nearly mad with joy although I readily gave a three quarters share of the merit in the triumph to Herold for I must admit the public at the first performance of *Le Muletier* had thought the piece

rather fast A piece taken from one of La Fontaine's fables—just fancy! Oh, but that the charm of the music softened their hearts, these good people might possibly have got into a rage against me We were very prudish in Paris under the Restoration, prudish out of doors, for *pose*, for they were less strict in their morals at the Court And the proof of this is—a thing which consoled me for the attacks which were made against me for having written so fast a *libretto* as that of *Le Muletier*—that the piece was acted in 1825, by Royal Command at St Cloud, and that nobody there complained of it On the contrary, they not only applauded the music, but they laughed at the words I heard that especially the Duchesse de Berry found the piece very amusing A princess in head and heart was on my side, and so from that time onwards I could afford to laugh at the hypocritical blushes of middle-class gentlemen and at those of the good ladies, their wives

A souvenir, which relates to this subject As I say, I was much pleased with the sort of protection which the Duchess de Berry had deigned to accord to my *Muletier*, and I did not conceal the fact One day Merle, who, as I have mentioned, was a Royalist to the tips of his fingers, said to me in the foyer of the Opéra Comique,—it was one summer's day in 1826 or 1827,—I don't remember the year

“What are you doing to-morrow, Paul de Kock?”

“To morrow? I don't know Have you anything to propose?”

An excursion Rather a long excursion but with a good cabriolet and a good horse we can cover fourteen leagues easily enough

Fourteen leagues! Heavens where do you want to take me to?

To Rosny to see the house of a lady of whom you are very fond the *chateau* of Son Altesse Royale Madame la Duchesse de Berry We will start at six in the morning by nine o'clock we shall be at Tril where we will stop for breakfast and give our horse a rest at eleven we will start off again and we shall arrive at Rosny at two or three o'clock I have a letter from the Count de Mesnars first equerry to Her Royal Highness which will open all the doors

But the Duchess?

The Duchess is not at home so we shall be quite free to visit the apartments the chapel the park and even the surrounding country for as we can't return until the next day for fear of killing our horse we will dine and sleep at the inn Well what say you?

I say—I say that I accept your invitation

Bravo! Well then to morrow at my house at six sharp

Now, agreeable as Merle's excursion seemed to me, I had not accepted his invitation without some hesitation and this hesitation was due to an aversion which I used to feel as a young man and which I feel still even now as I am writing these lines which shows that it is deeply rooted in me—an aver-

sion to travelling! Ridiculous as it may seem, I have never liked to leave my Penates. The longest excursion I ever took — I was twenty-three at the time — was to Beaugency, near Orléans, thirty-six leagues from Paris. I cannot help it. I hate moving, I hate inns, I hate the coaches. "But," you will cry, "coaching days are over. People travel by train now-a-days." Well, I hate trains even more, if it's possible for me to do so, than coaches. Brrr! — what grunting, grumbling, blowing, whistling, spitting machines! What blinding dust! What filthy smoke! To say nothing of the prospect of an explosion, or of running off the rails. When, for two summers, my son was living at Gournay, near Chelles, it was duty alone and because he was my son, that compelled me to go and see him.

Beaugency first, then Rosny. Such has been my experience in globe-trotting.

"What," said Nestor Roqueplan to me one day, "have you never wished to see Holland, the country of your father, of your brothers?"

"No"

"Have you never thought of visiting England, where you are almost as much admired as Dickens?"

"No"

"Or Russia, where your name is as well known as it is in France?"

"No"

"You have at least seen the sea at Havre, or at Dieppe?"

I have never seen anything but the Seine—from the quays—and glimpses of her sister the Marne when I have been walking at Joinville or at Nogent

It's incredible.

Roqueplan was laughing but suddenly growing serious he added

'Well you're quite right Paul de Kock the Parisian writer *par excellence* Paul de Kock should never leave Paris When I come to think of it I even wonder that you should have the rudacity to spend the summer in the Romainville woods your only country seat should be a dozen flower pots on the window sills of your apartment in the Boulevard Saint Martin When you die—may the day be far off—your epitaph should be Here lies Paul de Kock who was born in Paris who died in Paris and who never left Paris And if Paris is as grateful to you as it ought to be this epitaph will be inscribed on a tomb erected at its expense

I don't ask as much as Roqueplan desired for me believing that my children love me too well to allow anybody else to provide a resting place for my remains but what I do say is that I expect to end my days there where I have always lived—in spite of the fact that the changes which have been made during the last few years have in some sort transformed the town into a new town which has no longer the same charm in my eyes

But progress you will say progress pleases the young if it vexes the old And as in the natural

order of things, it is the old who go first, the young, in working for themselves, are quite right not to trouble themselves about the regrets of the old people

To return to my journey to Rosny

I was to travel Fourteen leagues And what upset me the most, in the prospect of this journey, was to be forced to sleep away from home On the other hand, it is true, I was going to see the home of an amiable princess And then, I was certain not to be bored, with Merle as a travelling companion And then again, I had given my word

At six o'clock in the morning, I was at his house , at five minutes past six we got into our carriage , at nine o'clock we were at Triel, where we breakfasted , at eleven o'clock we set out again, and at half past two we alighted at Rosny Oh, up till then nothing had gone wrong Having put up our horse and trap, we made haste to the château, and whilst my companion presented his "Open, Sesame" to the porter, I began to stretch my legs in a magnificent avenue of century-old trees

"Paul de Kock"

It was Merle who was calling me He was standing on the threshold of the porter's lodge

"What's up?"

"We're in bad luck to-day, my friend "

"We can't go in?"

"We can't Madame is at home She has just arrived—about an hour ago—with several ladies of

her suite, and her head almoner the Bishop of Amiens

Oh indeed Well then I suppose we must go back to Paris'

No wait The porter has gone with my letter to ask for the Count the Mesnars orders

Oh if the Count de Mesnars is there?

He is and he'll tell us if we can at least take a walk in the park *Parbleu!* if Her Highness's grand almoner wasn't at the *château* I'm sure there would be no difficulty about our getting in But just fancy a Bishop!—

'Wouldn't like to run the risk of meeting two profane writers such as we are I can quite understand that

I'm awfully sorry dear fellow to have brought you so far for nothing but Madame was not expected back to Rosny before next week and—

Don't say anything about it my friend Its not your fault. But I say isn't that the porter over there coming back?

'Yes so it is And that's M de Mesnars following him M de Mesnars has taken the trouble of coming to us That's a good sign.

Merle ran to meet the first equerry He talked with him for some minutes The conversation was to our advantage for as soon as M de Mesnars had left him my comrade beckoned to me to come up with a radiant look on his face

'Well?

"Well! We can go all over the place Those are the Princess's orders M de Mesnars would not have dared, on his own authority, to grant us permission for anything more than a walk in the park, but when Madame heard that we had come all the way from Paris on purpose to see her house, she said 'My presence here must not stand in the way of their pleasure' M de Mesnars asked who was with me and I told him your name"

"And wasn't she shocked?"

"Not in the least. They're all witty people here"

As he spoke, Merle took my arm and proudly we walked up to the château We were shown all over it by a footman, with the exception of the room occupied at that moment by the Princess and her suite This room, her boudoir, served also as a studio, for, as may or may not be known, the Princess painted like a real artist We visited the drawing-rooms, the dining-room, the library, the bedrooms of the Duchess, of the Duc de Bordeaux, and of his sister, Mademoiselle All these apartments were furnished with elegance rather than sumptuously, one felt everywhere that this was the abode of a woman of taste But what pleased me particularly was a picture gallery, where I noticed a superb, full-length portrait of the Princess It was a master-piece

From the apartments we went to the chapel, where stood the monument which contained the heart of the Duc de Berry After that, our guide having taken leave of us, we were able, as fancy guided us,

to wander under the shady trees of the park, in the winding avenues of the gardens laid out in the English fashion. At each turn we found some new view to admire little thinking that our good star reserved us a still more pleasant surprise.

Six o'clock had struck and it was time for us to get back to our inn. It was long since breakfast and we were hungry.

We were walking along a path which we thought would bring us out into the long drive when suddenly there appeared at a stone's throw from us coming out of an avenue to the left a number of ladies. They were walking in our direction.

The Duchess murmured Merle.

By Jove! Let's go back.

No! It would look like running away. You don't object to see the original at close quarters after having so much admired the portrait?

Certainly not.

Well then here we are. Let us stay where we are!

All right.

The Duchesse de Berry accompanied by the Comtesse d'Hautefort the Marquise de Bethisy and two other ladies whose names I have forgotten (though Merle who knew the French Court by heart told me who they were) came walking towards us. We went to the side of the road to make way for them to pass and remained standing in respectful attitudes with our hats in our hands.

Madame, who must have been about thirty at that time, was not pretty, in the literal sense of the word, she was attractive. She possessed that grace which rivals beauty. But what struck me most about her was her toilette. Whilst all the ladies in her suite were dressed, as for a reception at the Tuilleries, in silk or in velvet, the Duchess wore a simple calico gown, such as shopwomen wear in their shops in Paris, and, an original detail, there was a taffety apron over the dress.

A Royal Highness in an apron! I had not expected to see that.

I am not conceited enough to think that she had come on purpose to see us, because she had been told that the author of *Le Muletier*, that play which had amused her, was one of the visitors to her domain, and yet, if my spectacles did not betray me, I can certify that Madame looked at both of us with some curiosity, as she passed us, saying in a ringing voice,

"Well, gentlemen, how do you like my Rosny?"

"Charming, Madame," said Merle, "like everything that belongs to your Royal Highness."

"Well, you must come and see it again. The park is magnificent in the autumn. *Au revoir*, gentlemen."

With these words, the Duchess went on, followed by her ladies, and Merle and I pursued our way, highly pleased with this meeting, and viewing with each other in praises of Madame's elegant figure, the

charm of her voice the expression of her face, af
fable and distinguished at once and the simplicity
of her dress Oh I could not forget the calico dress
and the little apron

Three or four years later I had twice occasion—
within a month of each other—to remember my
meeting with the Duchesse de Berry in the park of
Rosny The first time it was with a smile the
second, with a sigh

The first time was in June 1830 one evening
when the Duc d'Orleans was receiving the King of
France and the King of Naples at the Palais Royal

I was passing through the square at about nine o
clock Somebody pointed out to me one of the
gala carriages which at that moment were entering
into the courtyard of the Palace and said

Madame is in that carriage

Not with her little apron on I thought.

The second time was after the July days The
three glorious days as they used to be called then
when I heard that the Duchesse de Berry had left
France to follow Charles X to Holyrood

She'll never walk again in her dear park a
Rosny with her little apron on said I

And indeed Madame never saw this estate again
a place which was all the more dear to her in that she
held it from her husband After the July Revolution
the Rosny estate was sold and parcelled out. Cer
tain individuals are crazy to possess what has be

longed to the great, which is their way of consoling themselves for being doomed to remain nobodies. The castle alone, I am told, remains standing. If I could be carried there on a litter, I would refuse to go. I might meet some fat tradeswoman there, grown rich, in a trailing dress, and that would spoil my remembrance of the good Duchess—as they used to call her in a district where she did so many acts of kindness—in her little calico apron.

From 1818 to 1829—when the Opera Comique removed from the Salle Feydeau, which was falling in ruins, to the Place Ventadour—I never missed going, at least twice a week, to spend an hour or two in the *foyer* of this theatre, a *foyer* which resembled a drawing-room, and a drawing-room such as there have existed very few in Paris, where all the most distinguished artists used to meet.

I am not much of a conversationalist, as I have said, and consequently am more inclined to listen—to those to whom it seemed to me worth while to listen—rather than to get them to listen to me, and in this way I have been able to study the leading artists of every kind whom I used to meet in the foyer of the Opera Comique.

And shall I call them up before your eyes? Another sort of necrological review! But can the living complain if one talks to them of the dead, when these dead are worthy of being talked about?

I make no selection, I take each figure as it comes

back to my mind without troubling myself about his greater or lesser right to celebrity

To begin with Garat It was in 1818 when my first piece was being rehearsed at the Theatre Fey deau that I saw Garat for the first time in the green room Always elegant, always foppishly dressed although he was then past fifty always lisping and always laughing with a laugh which was I am sure you anything but contagious Garat's laugh used to sound like the creaking of a door on rusty hinges One could hardly believe as one listened to this irritating noise that this was the same voice which so delighted its hearers when he sang Madame Boulanger who was acting in *Une Nuit au Chateau* was one of Garat's pupils He was present at two rehearsals of the piece and on the evening before the first performance Madame Boulanger having sung a verse in a way which displeased him he began to sing it himself in the midst of the crowd of visitors and actors Oh! on that day I forgave him his horrid laugh Madame Boulanger was still young in 1818 and had a pretty voice but she could not sing my song like Garat It began

* Oui les femmes de ce pays
Sont fidèles à leurs maris
Tout comme celles de Paris

Garat had the vitality the go of the Gascon that

* "Yes the women of this country
"Are faithful to their husbands—
Just like the women of Paris

he was He used to tell wonderful anecdotes from his recollections of the court of Marie-Antoinette, of the Directoire and the Empire Elleviou, although he had long since left the stage, was never happier than when amongst his old comrades, and used to converse very pleasantly also, but when Hoffmann, the critic of *Les Débats* and author of *Le Roman d'une Heure* and *Les Rendez-vous Bougeons*, was in the *foyer* of the Théâtre Feydeau, "nobody else got any show," as Garat used to say, burying his chin spitefully in his cravat But, apart from Garat, nobody minded this at all Hoffmann was witty to the tips of his fingers—I might almost say, to the tips of his claws, for he was bitter But his sarcasm was so amusing, so bright, so original, that the person clawed by him was always the first to laugh at the scratch And note that he used to stammer—an infirmity which usually drives listeners away Picard, who was no friend of his because he had often handled his plays very roughly, used to say of Hoffmann "He stammers on purpose, so as to get time to think over his impertinences" As for me, I was fortunate enough to please Hoffmann, and he gave me the proof of this on several occasions Perhaps it was because I cared as little for talking as he cared little for holding his tongue

Amongst the writers with whom I made friendly acquaintance at the Opéra Comique, I may mention Emmanuel Dupaty, the author of *Picaros et Drégo*, and of a poem called *Les Délateurs*, which

created an immense stir under the Restoration Alexandre Duval another man who was certainly not a Republican old Bouilly who had been nick named the tearful story teller Scribe Panard Saint Georges, who like myself was a very young man in those days Ought I to say in those days, ' when by grace of Providence (no doubt in return for his many acts of charity) this happy M de Saint Georges is still to be seen to day after a lapse of forty years—as straight in the back as fresh in complexion and as black as to his hair as he was on the first day on which we met. Auber said to me last winter, speaking of M de Saint Georges He's the Laferrière of dramatic authors And the sly old octogenarian added at once with a laugh In his obstinacy in remaining young Don't misunderstand me

Amongst musicians I may name Cherubin Bertron Gaveaux Boieldieu of men of genius the most modest and the best hearted Auber Herold, who rivalled Hoffmann in caustic *terre* Kreutzer the able bandmaster at the Opera Panseron styled Nevertheless Caraffa Frederic Kreube and Pradher Blangini who had been the master of Pauline Borghese's orchestra, and according to *la chronique scandaleuse* which he was careful not to contradict to some extent also the master of her heart Batton who combined the glory of art with the profits of trade He kept an artificial flower business And why did he not stick to flowers all his life? We

should then have avoided writing, in collaboration, a comic opera in three acts, the very name of which I try to forget, whose terrible fall no doubt contributed, in no small measure, to shake the old foundation-stones of the theatre in the Rue Feydeau

Amongst painters, Carle and Horace Vernet, Isabey, Picot, Alaux, Ciceri

Amongst actors and actresses of the Opéra-Comique, Martin, Moreau, the handsome Lemonnier, Gavaudan, Ponchard, Férol, Baptiste, Vizentini, Lafeuillade, Huet, Cholet, old mother Desbrosses, Mesdames Pradher, Boulanger, Rigaut, Gavaudan, Ponchard, Lemonnier and Mesdemoiselles Jenny Colon and Jawureck

Great artists of other theatres used also occasionally to be present at what might be called the *sorées* of the Opéra-Comique *foyer*. I have met there Talma and Mlle Mars, Lays, an opera-star—at that time near its setting, Ligier, Armand, Madame Pasta, from the Italian theatre, Léontine Fay, from the Gymnase, Minette, from the Vaudeville. I also made the acquaintance there of a man who, by reason of his profession, which naturally enough is not held in very high esteem by theatrical people—he was Censor—should have been very ill at his ease in such a gathering, but who, on the contrary, was always received there with open arms, for his great wit and merriment.

Perpignan was the name of this censor, who belonged to a school of censors, now of the past. His

fund of good humour was inexhaustible. Funny stories and witty sayings poured like water from his mouth. Every evening he knew all that had happened during the day in the world of artists and used to hasten to the Theatre Feydeau to tell us all about it drawing a few select friends aside into one corner of the foyer for the purpose—as his stories were often of a fast nature.

'I can't understand it old fellow' Hérold who did not object to fast stories used to say to him 'You must have detectives in your service, so as always to be the first to know all the scandals.'

'You are quite right' said Perpignan. 'I have a pocket police, but everybody else can have just such a police of his own and the only thing is to know how to make use of it.'

And of what is it composed?

Of all the idiots whom I have the honour of knowing. When I meet them, I stroke them down and question them. Idiots are almost always conceited and talkative. When they want to make a man laugh especially when that man has the reputation of being fond of laughing they don't mind telling their own adventures even when the story is altogether against them. And so you see my dear Herold by simply walking up and down the boulevards from the corner of the Rue Louis le Grand to the corner of the Rue Montmartre from three o'clock to five I have no difficulty in getting all the queer or funny items of news of the day. I am al-

ways certain to meet, during my two hours' walk, at least half-a-dozen duffers, bursting to prove to me how stupid they are, by telling me all their private affairs and amply repaid if, on quitting them, I say 'Thanks, that's a splendid story of yours' 'I thought you would think so!' But keep it to yourself, because, as you may imagine, I don't want people to know that—' 'Of course not, what do you take me for? Anything confided to me is sacred'"

A good story which I heard from Perpignan, and which I have used, with certain modifications in one of my novels, is the following. Its heroes were a comic actor of the Variétés theatre, one of the most popular actors under Charles X and during the first years of Louis Philippe's reign, and a portrait-painter who was also greatly the fashion at that time.

We will call the actor Piberlo, and the painter Mistenflute. As Cuckolds generally manage to leave descendants, we must not risk giving offence to their families, even after forty years, by mentioning their real names.

Well, Piberlo, the actor, had a wife, a pretty wife, whom he used to neglect sadly, first because he had been married to her for ten years, and secondly because he was a thorough rake, and like all rakes, whose senses have been blunted by excesses, he found no charm in the healthy joys of conjugal felicity.

Madame Piberlo, who loved her husband, put up

with this conduct for a long time, protesting only with tears and gentle reproaches, against a neglect which was so insulting to her personal attractions. But women tire of weeping, especially when it is of no use. One day Madame Piberlo wiped her eyes and said "Oh it's so is it? He goes his way. Very well then I'll go mine. If I meet a good chance, may my husband lose his nose to which he owes all his triumphs if I don't seize upon it."

The good chance presented itself. One of Madame Piberlo's lady friends had had her portrait painted by Mistenflute the painter. The portrait was very good; it was very well painted and cheap when the artist, standing was remembered. This was Piberlo's own opinion.

"Well then said his wife 'you won't object to my also having my portrait painted by M. Mistenflute.'

I not at all if it amuses you'

It will amuse me very much

All right Get your portrait painted by M. Mistenflute my dear

Now it was less the painting than the painter that Madame Piberlo was thinking about when she made her request to her husband. Madame Piberlo had met M. Mistenflute at a friend's house. He was a fine man of about thirty five years of age and had pleased her at first sight. On his side M. Mistenflute had displayed an extreme gallantry to Madame Piberlo of whose conjugal misfortunes he was a

ware

Under such circumstances, a rapid solution was inevitable. At the first sitting, Mistenflute did little more than sketch out the lines of his sitter's face, but, on the other hand, he made a full confession of his passion, and at the second sitting, encouraged by an eloquent blush, the painter, making way for the lover, had become pressing. This time also he had been resisted, but it is to be feared that at the third sitting, Madame Piberlo must have punished her husband for his infidelity, all the more so because, to render this sitting a pleasanter one, it had been agreed that it should take place in a private room in a restaurant, accompanied by oysters, truffles and Champagne. And Mistenflute had special reasons for wishing this sitting to take place outside, for although he was a bachelor—and as such free to do what he liked—he had a pretty servant-girl, Catherine, a girl from Burgundy, at his house, whom he had had the weakness to make his mistress, but who was as jealous as she was young and winsome. Whenever a lady came to sit to her master, Catherine used to watch at the keyhole to see what was going on between him and the lady, and if she saw or heard anything suspicious, she used to make terrible scenes as soon as the lady has gone. Such a scene, for instance, as the following, which took place after Madame Piberlo's second sitting.

"So, that lady's to your taste, monsieur? You can't deny it?"

What? What are you talking about Catherine?
What lady do you mean?

Why the lady who has just gone out of course?
Not the Queen of Spades!

'You're mad'

Ah I'm mad! I suppose you'll deny that you
kissed her

I kiss Madame Piberlo?—I?—You mean to say
you saw me?

Don't try to be so clever I didn't see it because
you had put a canvas before the keyhole—and that's
a proof that you were intending some dirty trick. But
a canvas doesn't prevent one's hearing if it does
prevent one's seeing and I heard the sound of kisses
very clearly I heard them so clearly indeed that I
had to hold myself back with all my might or I
should have rushed into the room and have let your
fine lady have it with my fists

That would have been a pretty to do

Well and what for does she let you pull her
about? A married woman—it's disgraceful! It
would serve her right if her husband were to give her
a good hiding And then these actors—for I know
him well your Madame Piberlo's husband—he's an
actor—an actor at the Varietes I've seen him act
and stupid enough he looks on the stage.

Well and what about it?

'Well perhaps fellows in that trade don't mind
that sort of thing

'You're mad I tell you once again Catherine

Madame Piberlo is worthy of all respect ”

“Yes, well if she is so worthy of respect as all that, you mark me, monsieur, you write and tell her that you are forced to give up painting her portrait, that you are starting on a journey—that you’re ill—anything you like, provided that you don’t see her again ”

“Oh, bother, you tire me If I were to listen to you, I should soon have to give up painting women altogether ”

“Paint ugly women and then I’ll say nothing ”

“And I tell you to go hang with your jealousy ”

“Is that your last word? You refuse to write to Madame Piberlo to tell her to get her portrait painted elsewhere? ”

“Most certainly, I refuse ”

“All right, so much the worse for you I have given you warning, you shall pay for this, and she also ”

“All right, all right In the meantime, perhaps you’ll be good enough to get my steak ready, that will be much better than talking nonsense ”

Thanks to his ingenious precaution of placing a ~~can~~ was before the keyhole of his studio, during his ~~curious~~ two amorous sittings, Mistenflute felt himself master of the situation So, without troubling himself about Catherine’s fits, or the fit of sulking which she indulged in all day, he punctually kept his appointment next day and conducted Madame Piberlo, in a ~~hermetically close~~ cab, to the Méridien, a restaurant on the Boulevard du Temple, which was famous for

the excellence of its filleted soles *au gratin* and the comfortable furniture of its private rooms

In the meantime just when this couple was sitting down to table Piberlo was at his theatre rehearsing a vaudeville in which he had an important part Just at the finish of one of the principal scenes which had gone off with a rush to the enthusiastic applause of the author he was talking with a comrade behind one of the side scenes when the door keeper of the theatre came up to him in a mysterious manner and said

M Piberlo a word with you if you please

What's up?

His comrade had discreetly withdrawn The door keeper continued

M Piberlo there's a woman downstairs in my room who says that she absolutely must speak to you at once

At once? I am rehearsing I can't leave the rehearsal What sort of a woman is she?

She looks like a servant.

A servant?

'Yes and so I began to tell her that when you were rehearsing it was quite useless to ask to see you But she cried out in such a rage What! when I want to do him a service when a terrible misfortune is hanging over him which thanks to me he can escape do you mean to say that M Piberlo will refuse to see me

A service? A great misfortune? Oh! that's

quite a different matter The rehearsal can wait ”

So saying, Piberlo darted downstairs to the door-keeper’s lodge The woman who wanted to see him, was, as you have guessed, Catherine—Catherine, Mistenflute’s servant and housekeeper Her cheeks were blazing, her eyes were flashing fire, her breath came and went in gasps, like a person who is violently agitated

She recognized Piberlo

“So, here you are at last, sir It’s not a pity Come quick I have a cab waiting We may yet be in time ”

“In time? Where? For what?”

“I’ll tell you all about it in the cab Come ”

“Excuse me, pretty one I must really ask, before going off with you—”

“Oh! you must know at once All right ”

Seizing Piberlo by the arm, Catherine dragged him into the yard, and there, motioning him to stoop down, for he was as tall as she was short, she cried in his ear

“You are married, sir, are you not?”

“Yes ”

“And you love your wife?”

“What? What a question! Of course, I love my wife! But ”

“Well then you make a very great mistake She doesn’t care a bit for you, since she makes a fool of you ”

“A fool of me! What! What are you saying, girl?”

I say that your wife is unfaithful to you At least if she hasn't been so yet she soon will be It's not the inclination that she lacks and as to my master M Mistenflute he asks nothing better than to

M Mistenflute?—The painter?

Yes of course M Mistenflute the painter who as we are talking here is in a private room with Madame Piberlo in a restaurant

Oh

That riles you, eh?

Madame Piberlo unfaithful! And you know where she is, the wretch with her lover?

Of course I know since I have come here to take you to them'

Take me there take me there at once Perfidious Eleonora—I will kill her yes I will kill her I will wash my dishonour in her blood

Striding along at Catherine's side Piberlo soon reached the cab which was waiting on the boulevard opposite the Passage des Panoramas

The girl jumped into the cab and said to the coachman Drive to where I first took you in front of the Gaite.'

Piberlo followed her into the carriage which immediately drove off

True it must be that rakes are constitutionally different from virtuous men that is to say that with them vicious instincts dominate all other motives Entirely taken up with her plans of vengeance and besides being ten leagues from the thought that,

under the circumstances, her companion could have eyes for such trifles, Catherine, in springing into the cab, had unintentionally displayed, a wee bit higher up than the garter perhaps, a pair of limbs, such as many fashionable ladies in Paris would have envied, a pair of limbs of sculptural construction, a pair of limbs full of seductive promises, a pair of limbs fit to draw a man after them to the four corners of Paris, a pair of limbs such as Madame Pi-berlo assuredly did not possess. At least, the sudden sight of them awoke this idea in our actor's brain, and this idea turned his thoughts into a very different direction.

He was sitting opposite to Catherine, looking steadily at her. For, apart from her beautiful limbs, she wasn't bad, the little peasant-girl, not at all bad.

He took her hand.

"And so, little one," he began, "you are in M. Mis-tenflute's service?"

"Yes."

"You do everything for him?"

"What do you mean?"

"I mean that if it distresses you so much that he should make love to women, it is because you have your reasons for wishing to keep for yourself what he gives to other ladies. I mean that you have certain rights on him—very tender rights."

"I don't deny it, sir. I do like my master very much."

"Oh, indeed! Well, he's not to be pitied, the fel-

low to be liked by such a nice girl as you

Bah Go and tell him that He cares a lot for my liking him

Oh So he makes a habit of being untrue to you?

He does nothing else Why it's barely a week since he made your wife's acquaintance and—

And he's a monster this M Mistenflute nothing else My child? What's your name little one?

Catherine sir

My little Katie Your master is a wretch

Oh that he is

Who does not deserve to possess such a jewel as you

Oh I am no jewel and yet, if my master wanted it he could be so happy with me To begin with I am always thinking how to please him

Poor little Katie

Sir! Sir! What are you doing sir? What are you kissing me for?"

Because you are crying Katie It touches me I am drying your eyes

Thanks I can dry them myself

No you'll never dry them as well as I can dry them I say Katie I have something to propose to you

What is it?

Your master is a scoundrel—my wife is a—wretch'

'Yes indeed Its my opinion also that your wife

isn't worth much "

"Well, instead of torturing ourselves about people who betray us, why not seek to console each other mutually "

"What? Well, there's an idea!"

'A very sensible idea, my little Katie, my dear little Katie You leave M Mistenflute's service, you leave him to-day, without a word of notice You don't set foot in his house again To begin our mutual consolation, we'll dine, tête-à-tête in a restaurant, and to-morrow I'll take a fine room for you in a fine part of the town—a fine room which I'll furnish for you Oh! I earn as much money as M Mistenflute, don't you be afraid And with me you won't be a servant, you'll have nothing to do all day long but to be fond of me Settled, eh, my angel? It's settled, is it not? To the devil with your master! To the devil with my wife! Let us have our revenge Let us take a terrible revenge"

Stupefied with astonishment, Catherine had allowed Piberlo to speak without interrupting him, and this silence encouraged our comedian to further extremities So whilst, with one hand he clasped the servant-girl's waist, with the other he began to draw down the blinds of the carriage The imminence of her danger recalled Catherine to her senses With a violent effort she freed herself and then, redder than ever, red with anger and red with disgust, she cried out 'Is it possible Oh! I might tell a hundred people this story and not one would

believe it. What, you know that at this very moment your wife is dining in a restaurant with a lover and that's all the effect it produces on you You want—

I want you my little Katie I don't care for my wife any more I don't care twopence for my wife I love you alone

And I, I abhor you Ah I was quite right in thinking that people in your trade have no manliness left in them no heart

'Yes I have a heart, my little blue bird And here I offer it to you in this kiss

Come Will you let go of me I say

No I won't let go of you Katie, a kiss one only kiss a pledge of my happiness

'Yes, well here you are here's a pledge of your happiness And now go and look for your wife by yourself Good night

So saying Catherine freed herself once more from Piberlo striking him a violent blow in the face with her fist Then opening the door she jumped out of the cab and so disappeared amidst the crowd on the boulevard

Here we are governor! Here's the Gaite said the cabdriver rousing Piberlo from the painful torpor into which the little servant's energetic and victorious defense had plunged him It was true he was at the Gaite But what then? What use was it for him to have come there when he did not know at which restaurant it was that his wife was lunching with M Mistenflute?

"Well," continued the cabdriver, seeing that his fare did not budge, "are you going to get out, governor? So, the lady who was with you has left?"

"Yes," said Piberlo, with an attempt at a smile "She got out on the way to have a tooth pulled out, and I, I have changed my mind, I shan't get out here Take me back to the Variétés, old boy"

And back he went to his rehearsal, having made up his mind, since he had not been able to take his wife in the act, at least to give her a severe scolding

But even this consolation was denied to him, for when he opened the attack with this question, which he thought would confound her "Where and with whom did you lunch to-day, madame?"

"Rue de l'Echiquier, monsieur," said Madame Piberlo, quite calmly, "with my friend, Madame Dubois"

And there were no proofs with which to confound the traitress, and besides he was afraid that if he told his wife what he knew, which she could deny by accusing Catherine of telling lies, she might retort by laughing at him over the misadventure which had just befallen him and which it was impossible for him to deny

"Very well," said the prudent husband, nodding his head

And that was all He carried his investigations no further He even allowed his wife to continue her sittings at Mistenflute's studio, saying to himself no doubt, that if after all she were not guilty—for a

lady may lunch with a gentleman without any harm — there was no reason to prevent her having her portrait and that if she were guilty he must just put up with it, for nothing that he could do would undo what was done.

But the strangest thing of all is that this husband who to escape being hanged at by his wife, had put up with a grievance which probably was very well founded should rush off and relate the whole story to Perpignan whom he knew to be a kind of walking newspaper. His adventure seemed so very laughable to him himself that he felt Perpignan must share in his fun.

Perpignan was quite right idiots would supply the rope for their own hanging provided they were told whilst being hanged Oh what a fine rope It's only you who have so fine a rope

A last word about Perpignan which will bring a smile to the lips of those who knew him because it will remind them of one of this amusing fellow's queer crazes This craze of his was to draw horses everywhere and on everything A certain manager of the Palais Royal theatre whom I will not name as I do not wish to bring a blush to his cheek although it is long since he resigned his post had a hobby that was far less innocent From morning to night in his office he did nothing but draw with his pen sketches how shall I say? Rabelais would have said it outright but then I'm not Rabe

lais' Sketches sketches, in short of certain attractions, the almost absolute lack of which in Déjazet was one of the chief reasons of her ease in effecting disguises You understand, don't you? And this hobby of the theatrical manager was the cause of not a few ladies—who committed the imprudence of approaching him too suddenly—having to repent it, on finding him plunged in his all too realistic drawings Perpignan's imagination was not quite so *décolleté* Horses were enough for him horses seen from the front, horses in profile, in three-quarters' face, horses racing or resting, horses galloping or sleeping And to tell the truth, he did not draw them at all badly, as Horace Vernet himself admitted But he certainly used to draw too many of them If you asked Perpignan to dinner, he would slip out, before it was announced, into the dining-room, and during the time that he escaped your notice, would get out his stick of Indian ink and draw a horse on each of the meat-plates, under the soup-plates He very nearly got himself into serious trouble, in Algiers, where he was sent some years after the conquest, with the officers who lived in the same hotel as himself, for persisting in ornamenting their plates, day after day, in spite of their wishes on the subject These gentlemen were hungry, and just as they were going to help themselves to a slice of meat, they would find a horse on their plates and be forced to call for others At first the officers laughed, but afterwards they got angry Perpignan was obliged, in fear of

a sword thrust to give up his sketching parties on the table d hôte crockery and consoled himself by drawing his favourite subject all over the rooms of the Casbah even in the most private places

I can't help it he used to say to me It's not my fault, but when I haven't drawn a dozen horses in the day, I feel quite ill

To prevent his being ill whenever he came to dine at my house I used to bring him a dozen plates before my other guests arrived He then indulged his folly to the full of its bent and after that was quite sensible again

A witty man who was a man of talent besides whose acquaintance I made about 1826 in the foyer of the Opera Comique was Adolphe Adam. Was always was Yet another who is no more Yet another who died in the prime of his life like Herold with whom as I think he had many points of resemblance both in character and musical talents and who I may add loved him like a brother Younger than I by about ten years Adam showed me from the very first that he liked me My style as a novelist pleased him in which respect he differed from Herold who used to blame it for being too fast And this was really the reason why I only wrote *Le Muletier* with Herold he did not forget that my piece had provoked some disapproval on the first night, and this he said—not without justice as I admit—very nearly spoiled the success of his music And

it is certain that M^e de Planaïd, whom he took, after me, as collaborator, did not give him the same reasons for complaint. *Marie* has no resemblance whatever with *Le Muletier*.

Adam, who in 1826 was still only writing music for vaudevilles, was not so rigorous towards me. "Write me a 'book' in verse, Paul de Kock" he often said to me. I don't remember what prevented me—to my great present regret—from doing what he asked me, but I remember very well, that after a *fête* which we visited together, I told him a plot I had thought out for a comic opera in two acts, which pleased him very much. This *fête* was given by a popular poetical and lyrical society known as *Les Bergers de Syracuse*. This society, which was flourishing in 1826, was composed of people of every kind of trade, tailors, hairdressers, bootmakers, hatters, hosiers, grocers, all mad admirers of Apollo and of Erato. On joining this society, each member adopted some name in keeping with its appellation Lycidas, Corydon, Palémon, Tyrcis, and so on. Women were not admitted to the purely lyrical and poetical meetings, for fear they should disturb the shepherds reciting their idylls and singing their songs. But on the solemn day, on which the feast of "The Great Shepherd," their supreme head, was celebrated, the shepherds brought their shepherdesses with them. And they were quite right to do so, for there was dancing at this *fête*, and a ball, at which, had there been men only, shepherds though they

might be it would certainly have been lacking in picturesqueness

My tailor, who was a Shepherd of Syracuse had sent me as a dramatic author an invitation for the feast of The Great Shepherd I asked him for an other for Adam Adam was a musician so there could be no difficulty about it and Adam was duly invited The *fête* took place at Belleville at the Ile d'Amour It was on an evening in the month of July We arrived just as the shepherds before dancing with the shepherdesses were singing a chorus in honour of Sylvander the Great Shepherd raised aloft in their midst on a rustic platform in the garden At his side was a girl crowned with myrtle and roses who we were told represented the nymph Arethusa patroness of the corporation Whilst one listens one can look and whilst looking one can ever omit to listen The chorus was no doubt very fine, but we much preferred to examine the shepherdesses I won't assert that they were all pretty and certainly not that they were Sicilian in appearance and in language These shepherdesses of Syracuse were obviously artificial flower makers and linendrapers assistants from the Rue Saint Denis or the Rue Saint Martin But they all wore such a pretty dress a white frock and a large straw hat trimmed with blue or pink ribbons and they looked so happy so ready to be jolly that Adam and I felt quite ready to submit to the sway of the crooks of any two of them, whom we might choose and

who would deign to accept us, for a few hours, as their shepherds

So soon as the chorus was over, the shepherds, with their little ebony flutes, fitted with ivory, hanging from their button-holes, marched past the Great Shepherd and the Nymph Arethusa, and then the ball was opened A ball, with songs between each dance No, the shepherds of Syracuse were not satisfied with dancing alone, they had to sing also And these regular interruptions between the quadrilles, which at first seemed to me stupid, were later on voted an excellent invention both by Adam and myself Whilst the shepherds were singing, the shepherdesses walked under the trees in the gardens and we walked there also, and could talk with the two who had won our hearts, with greater freedom than in the ball-room Our two shepherdesses were Mesdemoiselles Idalie and Aminta, otherwise Josephine and Eliza, an artificial-flower maker and a polisher And so at ten o'clock, having been able to persuade these ladies that there would be enough shepherdesses, without them, left to the shepherds in the Ile d'Amour, we took them off to supper at the Vendanges de Bourgogne

My tailor bitterly reproached me afterwards, for this abduction of shepherdesses, which had greatly vexed his brother-shepherds

"It's not right," he said, "what you have done there No, that's not good behaviour And do you know what the consequence will be Idalia and

Aminta will no longer be received at the hamlet
The Great Shephcrd has declared it solemnly their
names have been struck off the list of shepherd
esses

Bah' I said what harm have they done? They
were hungry and we offered them the wing of a
chicken That won't prevent them from returning
to their sheep when you call them back

Lycidas otherwise Bertrand my tailor, shook his
head

We shall never recall them said he decisively
We have our standard of morality at the hamlet
sir and we don't want to have anything to do with
shepherdesses who are immodest enough to go off
with our guests

In a word this society of Shepherds of Syracuse
ridiculous as it was in the foolish pomposity of its ce
remony and the pretensions of its members to rank
as poets and musicians had in itself nothing worthy
of blame These workpeople who met together un
der names borrowed from ancient pastorals to sing
and dance were worth quite as much as those who
assemble to day to discuss their civil rights in front
of jugs of blue wine And further the popular fetes
of those days had the advantage over those of to
day that one could go to them without running the
risk of being suffocated The people probably
drank as much in those days as they drink now
but they did not smoke Two or three years ago I
wanted to see a popular ball in Paris out of curiosity

and I saw nothing—clouds of smoke filled the room—but I smelt a good deal and I made haste to escape Poor people of Paris, is then one of your most precious senses, the sense of smell, so weakened, that you can find pleasure in unceasingly saturating yourself with the filthy stench of that accursed plant, tobacco? The people will answer me by saying that everybody in Paris, from the top to the bottom, smokes now-a-days, rich and poor, artists and shopkeepers, workmen and noblemen Well, to this I reply, that it's so much the worse, if everybody smokes now-a-days in Paris—and, I presume, in the provinces also—because, as I think, the tobacco habit is an odious habit which has disorganized everything amongst us, gallantry, good manners, wit, amiability, politeness It may seem a paradox, what I am going to say, but I do say that I am convinced that if, for the last thirty years, the French have always been dissatisfied with everything, always restless, always turbulent, it's because they always have either a pipe or a cigar in their mouths It is tobacco which makes them mad or wicked Let them give up smoking and they will become again what they were before, good and intelligent

This will tell you, reader, what little use I make of tobacco I have already mentioned one of my aversions, travelling, tobacco is my second aversion, and dogs my third This last aversion dates from my childhood Whilst I was quite a child, I used to see my mother turn pale, when the smallest toy-ter-

rier came near her barking and having learned thus as a child, to beware of the canine race I continued as I grew older, to keep it at as great a distance as possible from me. All things considered however I will say this that if I was forced to choose between a journey of fifty leagues the society of a smoker for a whole day, and the company of a dog for a month it's the last I would choose having learned from experience that if all dogs bark they don't all bite whilst as far as I am concerned all journeys are tiresome and all smokers unbearable

What I like amongst animals

But I'll tell you that later on At present I must close this chapter

The *fête* of The Shepherds of Syracuse at the Ile d'Amour had given me the idea for a comic opera which pleased Adam immensely and we frequently met to talk it over But various circumstances separated us Adam went off on a journey if I remember rightly and I was taken up with pressing work in one word *Les Bergers de Syracuse* remained an embryo This did not prevent me later from applauding with all my force the first performance of Adams first work *Pierre et Catherine* which was played at the Salle Feydeau for its closing in 1829

For its definite closing The hall was condemned and it was closed for the last time in April 1829 It was not without regret that I saw its walls falling under the picks of the masons No doubt the theatre

was an old one, it was mean and clumsy in construction, its entrance, narrow and dark, was as dangerous for people on foot as it was inconvenient for carriages, but it was full of pleasant recollections for me I had scored some triumphs there, amongst others, besides those which I have mentioned, that of a piece in three acts, *Les Enfants de Maître Pierre*, with music by Kreubé, in which Ponchard, La Feuillade, and Mesdames Pradher and Rigaut acted It seemed to me, as I watched its destruction, that it was less a public building which was being destroyed, for the public safety, than a friend of mine who was being sacrificed

And is it not natural to attach oneself to things as to people, and if one weeps for a dead friend, may we not also weep for the house where one used to meet this friend?

Hérold shared my opinion in this matter One evening in the autumn of 1829, we were passing in front of the Salle Feydeau, of which nothing was left but a heap of rubbish

"It was there," he said, "that my first two operas were played, my *Les Rosières*, and my *La Clochette*"

"It was there," said I, "that they played our *Muleteer*"

"Ah, well," said Hérold, "I regret this theatre One knows what one loses, one does not know what one is going to get"

Dear Hérold He was fated not long to survive the Salle Feydeau Less than four years later, in the

month of January 1833 he succumbed, in the flower of his youth at the full of his fame to a disease of the chest. I was present at the first performance of his *Le Pre aux Clercs* his swan's song, and when I got home after this triumphal evening I awoke my wife at one o'clock in the morning by playing and singing one of the motives of this delicious play which had struck me the most the soldiers chorus in the third act

Nargue de la folie
 De tous ces gens de cœur
 Ils vont jouer leur vie
 Pour un faux point d'honneur

And some days later the powerful head which had created these divine melodies was cold in death a few days more and I followed Herold to his last resting place

As for me I went but rarely to the Opera Comique which was moved in turn from the Rue Feydeau to the Place Ventadour and then to the Place de la Bourse The management of the theatre itself changed hands three or four times in a period of four or five years and the company was in part renewed I felt a stranger amongst all these new faces and withdrew From that time on writing for the stage was for me only a recreation from my labours as a novelist As soon as it became a cause of fatigue and worry I preferred to give it up rather than to fight against adverse circumstances

And this is what I also did at the Vaudeville and the Palais-Royal, when the managers of these theatres, who had for a long time been in the habit of rushing into my arms as soon as they saw me from afar, appeared, later on, not to remember my name, when I bade them good-day Oh! theatrical managers are a very capricious race But there is something stronger than caprice, and that is contempt And when you are able to do so, that is to say, when you have other strings to your bow, it is, trust my word, a real delight to be able to turn your back, full and square, on disagreeable people

CHAPTER VIII

I dine at the Hotel de Ville — Comte de Chabrol — Casimir Delavigne — Inception of a gag — There's nothing there yet we must get something put there — The Revolution of 1830 — The gag goes on — M de Salvandy — Alexandre Dumas Gerard de Nerval etc etc — Dupeuty takes it up — My patrons in spite of myself refuse me their protection — Decorations which begin at home — A proof of the esteem in which Pope Gregory XVI designed to hold me — A mysterious call — Do they want to make me a carbonaro? — They want to bestow a certain Italian order upon me — My answer to this proposal — Silent for thirty years — The gag comes on all the stronger — The papers under the Empire on August 15th and New Year's Day — Good old Paul de Koch — My martyrdom — A gentleman who frequents ghosts — Your father is decorated — I did it — I ask to be made a Commander — Lambert Thiboust's heartfelt cry — The fox too ripe for the grapes — The best of Republics — There will never be any more fighting — At the guardroom with Frederick Lemaître — Sham patrols hinder the real patrols — I spend an evening at Lafayette's house — What I see there — Enough of politics let us talk of Romainville — Abbotsford — The Romainville woods as they were formerly — *La Poule Russe* and its punch — How a woman who vended Cashmere shawls became tender — The *Tourne-bride* — Rohert or the *restaurateur* who illuminates

— Rides on horseback — I force my wife to take horse exercise in spite of herself — My repentance — 'I prefer that'

I think I stated, higher up, that I have never received anything from any Government, nor from any other public authority I made a mistake and do here rectify it In 1829, I received from M de Chabrol, Prefect of the Seine, an invitation to dine at the Hotel de Ville, an invitation, which I was servile enough to accept, even with certain pleasure The Comte de Chabrol, who was a man of great merit,—as indeed he must have been, to have been left by the Restoration in a post which he occupied under the Empire—had a reputation for loving the arts and for protecting them His asking me to his table—me, the popular novelist—was an acknowledgment that my works had some value I am not conceited, but it pleases me all the same, now and again, at a time when I am often attacked, to meet somebody who shows me, by his acts, how little he cares for these attacks I repeat it, it was with great pleasure that I accepted the Prefect's invitation

There were about forty guests at this table, painters, authors and musicians for the most part, and I was seated between Auber and Casimir Delavigne I had long been on friendly terms with Auber, but Casimir Delavigne I only knew by sight I paid him some compliments on his *Manno Faliero*, which had just been produced at the Porte-Saint-Martin, and this soon broke the ice Casimir

Delvigne whose talent is being denied to-day
is thought to day we possessed many poets of his
standing was very amiable and very simple as a
man. During official gatherings and for pre-
senting his family circle to society he had only come
to this banquet at M^e de Chibrol's pressing request.
And indeed I could understand that a big dinner
possessed few attractions for him for in obedience
to the strict laws which his weak state of health
imposed upon him he ate nothing but vegetables
and drink nothing but water.

Poor Delvigne said Auber who like myself
was blessed with an excellent digestion and is still
so blessed I should say for whenever I meet him
now days it is always in a provision shop Potel
et Chibrol's or Chevets— Poor Delvigne it must
be rather trying to you to see all these succulent
dishes all these excellent wines passing before you
without being able to touch them.

Oh not at all said the author of *Le rôle des
vieillards* laughing. I look at you my dear Auber
and you M^e Paul de Koch and see you enjoying
these dishes and these wines like true connoisseur
and as there is pleasure in admiration I don't bore
myself at all.

During the evening the Comte de Chibrol ad-
dressed a few words to me in private. They were
very flattering but I do not think it necessary to re-
peat them here. What I will repeat is something
else that was then said to me by the Prefect of Char-

— Rides on horseback — I force my wife to take horse exercise in spite of herself — My repentance — 'I prefer that'

I think I stated, higher up, that I have never received anything from any Government, nor from any other public authority I made a mistake and do here rectify it In 1829, I received from M de Chabrol, Prefect of the Seine, an invitation to dine at the Hotel de Ville, an invitation, which I was servile enough to accept, even with certain pleasure The Comte de Chabrol, who was a man of great merit,—as indeed he must have been, to have been left by the Restoration in a post which he occupied under the Empire—had a reputation for loving the arts and for protecting them His asking me to his table—me, the popular novelist—was an acknowledgment that my works had some value I am not conceited, but it pleases me all the same, now and again, at a time when I am often attacked, to meet somebody who shows me, by his acts, how little he cares for these attacks I repeat it, it was with great pleasure that I accepted the Prefect's invitation

There were about forty guests at this table, painters, authors and musicians for the most part, and I was seated between Auber and Casimir Delavigne I had long been on friendly terms with Auber, but Casimir Delavigne I only knew by sight I paid him some compliments on his *Marino Faliero*, which had just been produced at the Porte-Saint-Martin, and this soon broke the ice Casimir

Delavigne whose talent is being denied to day as though to day we possessed many poets of his standing was very amiable and very simple as a man Disliking official gatherings and far preferring his family circle to society he had only come to this banquet at M de Chabrol's pressing request And indeed I could understand that a big dinner possessed few attractions for him for in obedience to the strict laws which his weak state of health imposed upon him he ate nothing but vegetables and drank nothing but wafer

Poor Delavigne said Auber who like myself was blessed with an excellent digestion and is still so blessed I should say for whenever I meet him now a days it is always in a provision shop Potel et Chabot's or Chevets— Poor Delavigne it must be rather trying to you to see all these succulent dishes all these excellent wines passing before you without being able to touch them

Oh not at all said the author of *L'Ecole des Vieillards* laughing I look at you my dear Auber and you M Paul de Koch and see you enjoying these dishes and these wines like true connoisseurs and as there is pleasure in admiration I don't bore myself at all

During the evening the Comte de Chabrol addressed a few words to me in private They were very flattering, but I do not think it necessary to repeat them here What I will repeat is something else that was then said to me by the Prefect of Char

les X, which has stuck in my memory as the starting-point of a 'gag,' of which I have been the butt for the last forty years, and which, especially during the last few years, has greatly irritated me, although I am quite sure that such is not the intention of those who subject me to it and that, on the contrary, they think they are obliging me Whenever I hear this gag, I feel like Ravel, if you remember him, in *Une Fièvre brûlante*—how funny he was—when-ever he heard the sound of a piano I feel that I could scream If I don't howl like Ravel, it's because I dislike dogs and don't want to have anything in common with them

I will explain I have borne my martyrdom quite long enough as it is, without crying "Hold, enough!" and I could find no better opportunity for unbosom-ing myself, than in my Memoirs

Well then, after dinner, the Prefect had walked up and down with me, in one of the drawing-rooms, chatting Just as he was going to leave me, to at-tend to his other guests, he touched my buttonhole with his finger and said

/ "There's nothing there yet We must get some-thing put there one of these days"

This 'something' everybody can guess what it was, and I confess, with all humility, that the thought that this 'something' might be bestowed on me was in no wise shocking to my modesty One usually draws comparisons under these circumstances I saw men of letters being decorated every day, whose

equal I considered myself and I did not consider myself, accordingly, unworthy of a favour which had been granted to them

But if M de Chabrol was sincere, and I am convinced that he was if he really had it in mind to reward in my person a light a very light author such as I was an author who never tried to fix the attention of his readers by skilful dramatic conceptions nor by effects of style an author who, although he had adopted as his motto these two words Laughter first, had never tried to justify this motto by sacrificing the things to which respect is due Morality and Religion—events occurred which prevented him from carrying out his kind intentions The Revolution of 1830 broke out M de Chabrol retired and disappeared, and the bit of ribbon which, so to speak, he had offered me, never came to adorn my button hole

Under the reign of Louis Philippe I won't say one hundred, but two hundred three hundred people each in turn repeated M de Chabrol's words to me, in varying formulas 'There's nothing there yet we must get something put there' I may name M de Salvandy before he became a minister M de Salvandy whose acquaintance I made in 1824 when he was trying his hand as a novelist, and who at that time condescended to address me as colleague Alexandre Dumas who never once met me without saying Tell me the secret for writing a book like *Monsieur Dupont*, Paul de Kock! Scribe,

Bayard, Mélesville, Méry, Gérard de Nerval, whom I had never seen, but who, meeting me one day at the theatre, nearly squeezed my hand off and said "What, you're not decorated, Monsieur Paul de Kock It's a shame What can those duffers of ministers be thinking of?" Abel de Pujol, the painter, Gomis, the musician, David d'Angers, Dantan

I used to express my gratitude for all these offers of service, or expressions of regret, which were all the more gracious, that I had never solicited them, but when a man has been making himself hoarse, for over fifteen years, in returning thanks without ever receiving anything, it may be conceived that at times he feels somewhat irritated

In 1839, a vaudevillist, who had often been my collaborator in dramatic work, and with whom I had, notably, written the play *Un de Plus* for the Vaudeville, Dupeuty by name, made me lose my temper in this connection Dupeuty had often said to me "It's a real shame that you are not decorated, Paul de Kock" One day he said to me in my study. "My dear friend, now speak the truth You would not mind having the cross, would you?"

"Certainly not," said I "If I could get it without having to ask for it"

"Humph! You see one must always ask for it"

"Well then, let's say no more about it"

"Oh, on the contrary, let's talk about it, since, if you will give me your permission, I will do for

you what you refuse to do yourself and take the necessary steps I have many friends in the Opposition, and I am quite certain that by getting two or three of them to put their shoulders to the wheel I shall secure your nomination for you'

My good Dupeuty you are very kind but if it is to cost you any trouble to

Not at all Simply give me permission to act as I think fit and—it's just now the time when the list is being drawn up for the New Year—and before a fortnight's out—you mark my words—your name will be in the *Moniteur* amongst the new knights of the Legion of Honour

All right. So be it. Act as you think fit and accept my thanks in advance

Oh you needn't thank me It will please me perhaps more than it will you, to see you with the cross

A fortnight three weeks a month two months passed without bringing me any news of my cross I often used to see Dupeuty however, but he never referred to the subject It is true that I never questioned him about it At last one evening thinking probably that he owed me at least an explanation he said to me with a face about a yard long

My friend I am going to pain you but you know what it is about I deeply regret to have to inform you that I have failed

Oh indeed'

Yes The people I spoke to—three deputies of

the Left, who have but to speak, to get whatever they want,—have absolutely refused to support you. They do not deny your popularity, oh no ! but they said to me ‘Ask that Paul de Kock be decorated !’ We ! Why, if we did that, the Ministerial papers would not have enough jibes to cast in our faces ! To expect Liberals to interest themselves in the author of *La Pucelle de Belleville* and of *Le Cocu* We should be insulted, hooted at, abused ! If Paul de Kock wants the cross, let him apply to the King direct. We should not be surprised if he gave it to him. It is said that Louis Philippe is very fond of Paul de Kock, and that, from time to time, he sends a box of his books, together with some cases of first class Champagne, to Queen Victoria. Little presents keep up friendships. All that we can promise is that, out of friendship for you, we won’t criticize his nomination too sharply in our newspapers, when Paul de Kock is appointed knight of the Legion of Honour’ ”

I frowned Dupeuty paused an instant Then he continued

“I was afraid of this You are vexed by what I am telling you, Paul de Kock, but you must admit that it’s not my fault, if ”

“I beg your pardon,” I said, interrupting him rather coldly, “but it certainly is your fault, my good fellow, if on the pretext of rendering me a service which I did not ask of you, you have compromised my name and my character with individuals, whose

protection I personally should most certainly never have asked for

But—'

But you'll never get your three Liberal deputies to believe that it was not I who begged you to put yourself under their wings, for my advantage and it is that that vexes me, for I care nothing for the rest. The moral to be drawn from this affair my dear Dupeuty is for you that one should not oblige one's friends in spite of themselves, and for me, that it is folly to allow oneself to be obliged by one's friends in spite of oneself.

Excellent Dupeuty ! In spite of all his efforts he had been unable to get the cross for me and, without too much difficulty, I fancy he obtained it not very long after for himself. It is true that he was the author in collaboration with a score of colleagues of about fifty comedies and dramas nearly all of which were imbued with Liberal ideas. Now Republicans have always been readily decorated by Monarchical governments. It is a way if not of binding them, at least of preventing them from getting away. And a little strip of ribbon is not a costly affair.

Well I was one of the first to congratulate Dupeuty and upon my word he gravely accepted my congratulations without moving a muscle. I could have wished for his own sake that he had laughed a little.

Here follows an adventure, which, whilst bearing upon the subject of which I am treating at present, refers to the promise I made, in chapter IV, to give a proof, both curious and unknown, of the kindly esteem with which Pope Gregory XVI deigned to honour my works

It was in 1840, some months after the affair which I shall call, "The Dupeuty Affair, or, Decorations, which begin at Home" I was working one afternoon when a caller was announced. The gentleman would not give his name. "Can it be a second Villeneuve?" I wondered. But no, at first sight, I could have no suspicion that my visitor had anything in common with an actor, still less with a beggar. He was a man of about sixty, all in black, with black kid gloves, a man of serious and yet easy manners. His clean-shaven face was distinguished-looking and keen, and I set him down at once as a foreigner.

Indeed, at the first words which he spoke, I saw that I was not mistaken. He was an Italian.

"Sir," he began, "I am sorry to disturb you."

"Not at all, sir. But might I ask—"

"Who I am? I will ask your permission not to tell you that—if I am to tell it to you at all—until I have told you what is the object of my visit. And I will explain to you why I am charged to make you an offer, which you may accept, or which you may not like. Now, in the first case, it is obvious that I must tell you who I am, because the offer in question will be realized through me, but in the second case,

the contrary will hold good. When you refuse a thing it is hardly necessary to know who it is who has offered it. A refusal should suffice. Is not that so?

'Quite right' said I, not a little astonished at the stranger's mysterious manners. What in the name of Heavens was he going to ask me to do? Did he want me to join some secret society the *Carbonari* or something of the sort?

He continued smiling as though he had guessed my vague state of anxiety.

And in the first place don't be frightened sir. Politics have nothing to do with the object of my visit. We know that you are one of the few writers who are content to study life and to paint it, without pretending to reform society with your pen.

I breathed again.

In two words, here is what brings me here continued the mysterious gentleman. You cannot be in ignorance of the fact—since the French papers have often repeated it and it has never been denied by those concerned, which shows that it is true—that you are much liked at a certain Italian Court. Very much liked. The highest person in this court has all your works in his library, and he takes pleasure in reading them, for he finds them always amusing and never pernicious.

I bowed. Although I did not yet quite understand I at least was beginning to see what was in the wind.

"Well," continued my visitor, "it's—well I won't say in the name, that would be saying too much—but with the assent, the consent of this Exalted Person, as a mark of his special esteem for your talent, that I come to offer you a knighthood in an order of which he is the supreme chief An order which carries a name which is dear to every good Christian"

I bowed a second time

"Do you accept?" asked the stranger

"No, sir," I answered, "I refuse, but whilst refusing I beg you to rest assured of the gratitude with which your offer fills me"

"If the offer seems to you to merit your gratitude, why do you refuse it?"

"I might answer, in the first place, because I belong to the Reformed Church"

"Ah," said the Italian, suddenly becoming grave, "you are a Protestant?"

"Yes, sir I belong to the same church as my father But I do not put this reason forward, since, even were I a Catholic, I should still say, 'I am touched and honoured by your offer, but I cannot accept it'"

"And you cannot accept it, because "

"Because, in my opinion, when a man is not considered worthy of being decorated with the National Order by the government of his own country, he has no right to accept a foreign decoration"

My visitor, stretching out his hand to me, said

That reason is a decisive one, and it is also the only one which I shall give at home where I am sure it will be justly appreciated They will regret as I am the first to regret, that the want of justice with which your books have been treated, by the authorities in your own country force you to decline the rewards which may be offered to you elsewhere And now, Monsieur Paul de Kock our conversation having had no other result than to give me the pleasure of making your acquaintance will it be too much on my part if I ask you to allow me to withdraw without telling you who I am and further '

To keep to myself the recollection of this conversation No sir I promise it I will tell nobody of your call Nobody !

I have kept my promise for thirty years Am I wrong in breaking silence to day? Let those who think so blame me many others I am sure will absolve me and agree with me that with thirty years of discretion I have sufficiently kept my promise And now I can hear the mockers crying out Yes but what does your story prove since you are unable to give any names? It proves that you were probably the victim of some practical joke, that your visitor was probably some humbug who would have been in an awkward fix if you had taken him seriously with his order dear to all good Christians A practical joke! To begin with my Italian

did not look like a man of that sort, I vow it. And besides, practical jokes are only played on people who expose themselves to that sort of thing by their pretentiousness, their vanity, and I defy any body to say that I have ever been pretentious or conceited.

Well, I have told this story, because I think that it ought to have a place in my Memoirs. Let people say what they like. It may be laughed at, I am not frightened of its being denied.

To return to the gag!

During the first years of the present government, I was fairly well left in peace. Like his uncle, Napoleon III, during the first eight or ten years of his reign, had the bearing of a sovereign who does not allow his hand to be forced. He did not decorate me. If the friends of my buttonhole were good enough to groan—to groan because my buttonhole remained empty—at least they no longer bored me with their expressions of condolence. But the Emperor's hand relaxed,—I supposed it wearied him to remain always so stern—and, immediately, the said friends got on their hobby again, and on every side, on every pretext, I was once more persecuted with these two phrases “What? You are not decorated, Paul de Kock. But they absolutely must decorate you!” And had this only happened amongst friends! But, in 1861 or 1862, on the occasion of the Emperor's fête-day, a journalist wrote an article on this subject. That was the signal. From that

day no never a New Year's Day never an August 15th drew nigh without one's reading in half a dozen newspapers Come come let us hope that this time at last, Paul de Kock will get his decoration! These heartfelt cries were usually embellished with some such comments as the following Our poor old Paul de Kock who so amused our fathers the very least that can be done for him is to give him this pleasure before he descends into the grave—Our poor old Paul de Kock he would be so pleased to have the cross—They say that he is heart broken—poor old Paul de Kock—not to have the cross—He can't sleep at nights for thinking of it

All this no doubt is charming in tone if as a statement of fact it is wanting somewhat in accuracy Of course when a man gets old he knows the fact well enough He knows it only too well No need for anybody to tell it to him But leaving that aside my journalist friends if you could only know to what worries your kind expressions of sympathy expose me each year, you would think twice in future before continuing to overwhelm me On each New Year's Day in Paris and on each August 15th in Romainville I have not a minute's peace One letter ten letters twenty letters come in one after the other all couched in some such terms as the following

So you have got it at last my dear Paul de Kock Justice has been done to you I hope that

I am the first to offer you my warm congratulations ”

Then my friends call, hastening to shake hands
with the “new knight ”

They come in

“Well?”

“Well, what?”

“So it’s done at last?”

“What’s done?”

“But I read in last evening’s paper, that you have
got the cross ”

All have read it, all Their friendship willingly
exaggerates facts The newspaper had said that I
was *perhaps* going to be decorated, and they had
understood that I had been decorated Why, only
last year, I very nearly quarrelled with an old friend
of my youth, because he found me, on August 15th,
in my garden, without my “ribbon” in my coat.

“You are wrong, dear fellow,” said he, very se-
riously “As soon as one gets it, one ought to wear
it ”

“What ought one to wear?”

“Come, come Is it because you have had to wait
so long for it? Better late than never Put it on,
my friend, put it on at once, or else people will
think you despise it ”

Here is something still richer

Four or five years ago, the evening before August
15th, as my son was entering the stalls of a theatre,
he was seized by the arm by a gentleman who, as I
am told, is in constant communication with ghosts

—a thing one would not imagine from his appearance.

'Well said the gentleman to Henry. You're pleased, I hope.'

'At what?'

'What, you don't know it? Your father has been decorated. It will be gazetted in the *Moniteur* tomorrow.'

'Oh if that's true I should be very pleased as you say but—'

'But it is true. The decree has been signed. And I ought to know. It was I who had his name put down on — s list.'

He mentioned the name of a Minister. I do not repeat the name thus taken in vain by a stupid practical joker.

However, as the gentleman who was a friend of the spooks was reputed to be on excellent terms also with certain persons in very high places—persons whose dreams no doubt he interprets to them as Joseph did to Pharaoh—my son grasped his hand and said

'In that case I have to thank you both for my father and myself my friend.'

'Oh, there's no need to thank me old fellow. It's long since I said to myself Paul de Kock ought to be decorated.' Now he is. If I have helped it on a little, I have done nothing but my duty.'

The next day Henry came to Romainville on purpose to tell me the news. I merely shrugged my

shoulders, because, more knowing than he, I saw at once that it was untrue

"But that can't be so," cried my son "Why should Z— have told me a lie?"

"Simply for the pleasure of lying, my boy Nothing else This gentleman wants to posture as a patron, and posture he did"

"And made a fool of me It's a whim which may cost him a few cuffs"

"Bah One doesn't get angry with humbugs Give him tit for tat When you next meet the gentleman to whom I owe my cross, tell him that I am very grateful to him, but that I am not quite satisfied, and that whilst he is about it, and as he has such influence with the Ministers, he might get me my nomination as Commander of the Order, for New Year's Day"

But enough on this subject I do not want this gag to worry my readers as much as it has worried me So I close with this declaration, which I beg the journalists who are good enough to interest themselves in my buttonhole, to take in earnest I have never told a lie in my life, and I am not going to begin to tell lies at seventy-six

I may have wished for the cross, like any other man *I wish for it no longer* I wish for it no longer, because, after having seen it bestowed, in turn, during the last forty years, on most of those who entered on the career of letters as my juniors,

if the cross were given to me to day, it would be less a reward of which I could be proud than a sop of comfort and a useless one at that because as I regret nothing I don't want any comfort. In one word I prefer people to say of me Why isn't he? than that they should say what they say of So and So or of What's his Name Why is he? It is forty years now (I promised to speak out and I am doing so) since I ought to have been decorated I am not decorated and never shall be So let no body say anything more about it even as I shall not say another word on the subject It will oblige me greatly

Three or four years ago I met one evening on the boulevard, Lambert Thiboust a witty vaudevillist, with whom I wrote the piece *Une Maitresse bien agréable* for the Varietes a good fellow, whose sudden death distressed me greatly As we were talking together he said suddenly in a gust of effusion

My word Monsieur Paul de Kock I am speaking the truth I should be ashamed to wear the cross whilst you have not got it'

Bah my friend said I, don't be so scrupulous Decorate your buttonhole when you can and don't trouble about mine It'll do very well without the poppy red'

The grapes are too sour Master Fox exclaims with a laugh a journalist who wants to have the last word in this matter but who shall not have it for I make answer and say without laughing

"No, sir, it's not the grapes which are too sour for the fox, but it's the fox who is too mature for the grapes His taste for grapes has passed, he has no longer any appetite for them"

Where did I leave off? As far as I remember, it was dining, in September, 1829, at the Hôtel de Ville, with M de Chabrol, Prefect of the Seine, under the reign of King Charles X

Well, some months later, on July 31st, 1830, King Charles X was in flight, M de Chabrol was no longer Prefect of the Seine, and at one of the windows of the Hôtel de Ville, in front of which I found myself that day, with my friend Pâris, I saw the Duc d'Orléans, with General Lafayette on his right, and behind him, Laffite, Benjamin Constant and M Viennet, waving a tricolor flag to the enthusiastic acclamations of the crowd

Which meant to say, as Pâris, who was a deep politician at times, explained, that the Revolution was finished, well finished, and that we had every reason to rejoice, since the Duc d'Orléans had accepted the office of Lieutenant-General of the Kingdom, which had been offered to him by the Chamber, and the kingdom was in consequence going to be happier than it had ever been under any government

"So there will be no more fighting in the streets?" said I to Pâris

"Of course not, there'll be no more fighting,

there will never be any more fighting Charles X had become impossible, you can imagine it, my friend, with his reactionary ideas His last decrees concerning the press and elections dealt him the last blow He has been turned out and its a good thing The Due d'Orléans has been appointed Lieutenant General of the Kingdom In less than a week, he will be made King

Ah, you think that.

I am sure of it Lafayette has said so He sees in him the best of Republics

Oh if Lafayette said so As for me all I wish is to be able as soon as possible to look out of my window without running the risk of getting a bullet in my head and above all without having to look on whilst some poor wretch dies in front of my door without daring to go down and succour him

It's over, I tell you, my dear Paul, it's all over In less than a month all traces of these three terrible days will have been wiped out'

Except I suppose in the hearts of those who have lost some one who was dear to them a brother a husband a son

Oh! But what do you want? One can't make an omelette without breaking eggs

Yes yes that's a very nice proverb for people who like omelettes but not so for the hens

It had been with the greatest reluctance that I went to the Hotel de Ville with Paris A mob fills me with terror I find that even when it is joyous it

appears to be enraged. But when one has been shut up at home three days and three nights, one wants at any cost to walk, to get the air. And the fact is we had had a bad time of it, my wife, my children and I, in our apartment on the Boulevard Saint-Martin, during the days of 27th, 28th, and 29th of July, 1830. The Boulevard Saint-Martin was not then, as it is now, adorned, for half its length, (ought I to say, adorned?), with a sort of hollow *chaussée* fringed with heavy ramparts, but ran straight and level from the faubourg to the Ambigu, a most favourable field for cavalry charges. And so there had been a good deal of fighting on my poor boulevard. The old elms which shaded it had been stripped of their finest branches, and the shutters of all the houses looked like sieves.

But what a thing curiosity is to be sure! My wife and I both knew very well that in looking out through the shutters during the fighting we ran the risk of getting wounded, yet the temptation to look was irresistible, we wanted to look and we did look, reproaching each other with our imprudence our folly. A stupid folly, at the best. The sight of men mortally wounded, rolling in their blood, in the death agony, is an ugly one. The same sight was to be seen under my windows on the 24th of February, 1848, but, that time, I did not look on. I kept in the back-rooms with my daughters, waiting till the storm had passed, without the least wish to witness its furies.

Paris, indeed, had made no mistake and already on July 31st posters were up at every street corner announcing that Henceforward the Charter will be a fact and the Parisians in consequence from lions that they were the day before, had become sheep What did they want? That the Charter should henceforward be a fact. This was promised this was publicly posted up so they buried their dead, and bughed as they bandaged their wounds

However as it is an wverred fact that when the Parisians have once tal en up a rifle they have the greatest reluctance to put it down again a sort of National Guard had been organized throughout the whole town for fear of an aggressive return of the Royal troops and every good citizen's duty was to join it I was a good citizen and so I became a National Guard I was on duty four successive nights Frederick Lemaitre who lived in the same house as I did, on the Boulevard Saint Martin in 18,0 belonged to my company He must remember how one evening when our corporal came in to the guard room, lool ing very pale and told us that something was expected to happen that night that *sham* patrols had been sighted—that is to say patrols composed of the enemy of Swiss and gendarmes—and when some minutes later a *real* patrol was being sent out to reconnoitre it was found that of the 25 men who had been there when the corporal came in only seven were left Gad' you know it's not everybody who cares to run risks

And Frederick Lemaître will confess that, like myself, though we had both stood our ground, he made no objections when the commanding officer, having spoken in scathing terms of the conduct of the citizen-soldiers who had disappeared, ended his harangue by saying to the citizen-soldiers who remained

"Well, gentlemen, since these cowards force us to it, hard as it is, as we cannot abandon the guard-room, there shall be no patrolling to-night, by true patrols Paris will take care of herself without us"

Louis Philippe, styled 'the best of Republics,' was accordingly proclaimed king of the French on August 9th, and Paris was not a little proud of having prophesied so truly

"Now we are quiet," he said to me, "quiet for ever"

"Humph, for ever?" said I "Are you quite sure?"

And I began to sing

"Neither never, nor always,
Is the motto of the French" *

"I admit," said Paris, "that the French are unstable But what could they ever get better than what they have got now? A Constitutional King"

"I don't know what the French could get better, but I say again that I shall be very astonished, if some day they don't serve Louis-Philippe, just as

" Ni jamais, ni toujours,
C'est la devise des Français

they have served Charles X even to change for the worse

Bah Lafayette is there to keep the mob in order'

Lafayette is no longer young

Bah How old is he? Barely seventy three He has still ten years to live and in ten years a Government has time to get itself firmly established

Paris was a great admirer of Lafayette whom he always called the Veteran of Liberty In the winter of 1831 he insisted on taking me to one of the General's evening receptions I had refused to go saying that I had not been asked a reasonable excuse enough

There is no need to be invited to go to Lafayette's house said Paris, Lafayette receives all comers and he is pleased to receive them

Even when he does not know them?

Why should he know the names of his visitors? Is he not certain that they are all his friends? Come you must come with me Paul de Kock.

But what shall I look like I a novelist, at the house of your great politician?

You need not look like anything Nobody will take any notice of you and the General least of all You will make him a bow he will shake hands with you and that's all You will then stroll through his drawing rooms and look about you and when you have had enough of it you will go away

A public drawing room of this sort offered indeed

a very tempting study So I accompanied Pâris to General Lafayette's in the Rue d'Anjou-Saint-Honoré

It was a Tuesday, the General's day of reception It was not yet nine when we arrived, yet the drawing-rooms were already crammed with visitors They were not all faultlessly dressed, oh, no! I even noticed a great number of people who, if their means would not allow them to wear gloves, might at least have washed their hands before entering But no doubt these gentlemen thought that dirt is a sign of Liberalism Besides, Lafayette's apartment was so plain, both in decoration and in furniture, as to defy these democratic liberties We saw the general, we bowed to him and, in accordance with the established programme, he gave us in return a warm shake of the hands, which for my part, touched me deeply People may have made light of Lafayette, Mirabeau may have styled him Grandisson-Cromwell, and Napoleon may have called him a fool, yet he was by no means a nobody, this man who had been the friend of Washington, and who, although he had not often played a brilliant part in the events which took place in turn in France from 1789 on, had at least always acted as an honest man And besides, he was a contemporary of my father, perhaps he had known him, perhaps this hand which pressed mine had formerly pressed a hand which I had never the joy of touching with my filial lips

In a word, I did not regret my visit to Lafayette,

the only thing I did deplore was that for twenty notabilities political and other, who were pointed out to me in his house I had met so many nobodies of evil men Popularity is not all roses and there must have been plenty of work for the brooms in the general's drawing rooms after those people had left

But enough—reader, you agree with me?—on subjects which have a political odour And so to finish this first part of my Memoirs to my liking and I hope to yours also I have a great wish to leave aside all other stories and to tell you the story of that summer residence of mine which has been the delight of my heart for close upon forty years and which is still so to day, in spite of the alterations for the most part ugly, which time and men have effected in the neighbourhood Romainville—now called The Lilacs—Romainville is my Abbotsford the Abbotsford of the popular novelist Walter Scott had a castle, Paul de Kock has a little house But who has been happier, at home the owner of the little house or the master of the big castle? Between ourselves, I would not put my money on Sir Walter Scott For forty years I have worked, free and contented at Romainville I have laughed there with my friends I have also wept with them when death suddenly robbed me of those dear ones whom one can never replace in life my wife and my mother

Well let us begin the story of Romainville You

will find that it will not bore you To begin with, I have already told you that my liking for that part of the country dated from my youth , I have told you that when I was twenty years old, whenever I wanted to take a lady for an excursion on Sundays or holidays in the summer, it was to the Romainville woods that we used to go And where, timing yourself by your watch, could you find a pleasanter hour's walk from Paris? And, mark you, it was an excursion for which you could dispense with a carriage, which was not its least advantage Arm in arm we used to walk up the faubourg du Temple and la Coutille , we crossed Belleville, passed along the road of the Saint-Fargeau Park, leaving the telegraph to the right and the Piés-Saint-Gevrais to the left, and there, directly in front of us, was the country, fields of rye and of wheat, divided off by bushes of red and black currants, where in autumn, we used to pause stealthily, shaded by plum-trees and nut-trees from which we used to pick some fruit on the sly On the sly, for the rural guards were on the watch there, and these rural guards of Romainville were not too well disposed towards the Parisians At last the woods were reached, and here on the border of the woods was an inn, a good village inn, such as there used to be in those days, clean and simple in appearance It was called *A la Poule Russe*, and is still standing You could get Bagnolet wine there, the wine called *piction* It cost twopence the bottle, and made excellent punch In 1812, I knew

a little artificial flower maker who liked this little Bagnolet wine so much that once she had taken her seat in the vine covered arbours of *La Poule Russe*, it was impossible to get her away. On three separate occasions I wanted to take her to Romainville and on each occasion we did not get beyond *La Poule Russe*. I was forced to give in.

Although the forest was not of very great extent it was still big enough for anyone who did not know it to lose himself in. I knew it as well as the inside of my pocket and so, when I did lose my way there with one of my conquests, it was only to draw advantage from her terror. When women are frightened they usually become very tender. I may be mistaken and it may be that places and things seem more charming in memory than they really were, but I will say that it seems to me that the Romainville woods were charming far more charming than those in the neighbourhood of Paris both in the varying conformations of the land and the wild picturesqueness of its trees. One thing is certain and that is that the avenues in it were not cut out in straight lines like those in the Bois de Boulogne or in the Bois de Vincennes. It was allowed to grow as it pleased, little wood for lovers and for artists as it was, without being clipped and pruned and trimmed.

And as one walked down towards Pantin skirt ing Madame de Montesson's park what an admirable view opened out before one's eyes. Paris and

the whole plain of St Denis was stretched out before you, in a fairy-like panorama. Thanks to this panorama, in 1816, I got the first kiss from a charming mender of cashmere shawls. My love, the wine-punch, an excellent lunch at the gamekeeper's house and a walk under the trees, had not touched her heart, it was the magnificent view which tamed her.

"Ah, how beautiful," she cried.

"It's not as beautiful as you are," said I. And, you must admit, I could say nothing else.

She smiled. I picked this smile from her quivering lips. An hour later, she was calling me 'my dear Paul.'

I have mentioned an excellent luncheon at the gamekeeper's. Perhaps I have spoken rather too well of this meal, for, to tell the truth, that rascal of a gamekeeper, taking advantage of the fact, that in those days, there was no other house in the forest where one could get anything to eat, used to take very little pains in his cooking. Eggs and chops or chops and eggs, his bill-of-fare never varied. It was only in 1818, that a man called Robert, one of Cambacérès' former cooks, was found intelligent enough to open a restaurant in the forest of Romainville, a house at the sign of *Le Tournebride*, which soon became famous. Robert was a character as passionately devoted to his art as Vatel, and really cooked very well indeed. I had the pleasure of helping on his house by describing it in some of my novels, for

which he always remained very grateful to me. The day on which he heard that I was coming to live in the district, he illuminated By illuminating' Robert meant getting drunk It's an excellent thing and Hippocrates as we know, recommends it, to exceed now and again but it's very bad when drunkenness becomes a habit Robert ended by illuminating so often that at last he went out altogether, after having completely ruined his establishment His successor who was but an indifferent cook merely vegetated *Le Tournebride* disappeared There is a private hospital in its place to day Its private rooms have been turned into sick rooms and people cough and spit and groan there where once one laughed and sang and kissed Poor *Tournebride*!

It was in 1818 also that people began to let out horses—seeing what sums were to be earned in this way—for excursions in the wood This was an other reason why I often went there I had never taken riding lessons and was I admit a very bad horseman so bad indeed, that I rarely got on horse back without alighting at least once head foremost But one can never pay too dearly for a pleasure I liked horse exercise and the fact that it did not like me did not trouble me For more than ten years I never let a week go by without going for a gallop with a friend or two in the Romainville woods or in the environs, Noisy le Sec Montreuil Ville momble Montfermeil And after I got married I made my wife come out on horseback with me

CHAPTER VIII

That was selfish on my part, you will say. Say it, if you please. But my wife never said it, not she. My good and darling Eliza. She would have accompanied me in a balloon, if I had wanted her, and without hesitation. One day, however, she fell off her horse in the wood, and her fall might have been a very bad one, and that made me reflect. If I had the right to run risks with myself, I had none to risk killing my wife. So that put a stop to her rides, and as to myself, a cold bath which, together with one of my hired steeds, I had to take against my will in the pond at Bagnole, cooled my equestrian ardour.

"We'll continue our excursions at Romainville," said I to Eliza, "but we will go on foot."

"I won't deny that I like that much better," she answered, again without hesitation.

CHAPTER IX

House for sale — That won't bind you — M and Madame Cartery — An inspection of the little house — My wife has an answer to everything — Five thousand francs and the expenses — *Un de plus* — Arnal rescues us — We have our home — My shrubs and my beds — No drinking water — My wife is frightened — A nocturnal adventure — The band of thieves — I nearly commit a crime — The Romainville bill — Amédée de Beauplan — Mademoiselle Plessy — I shoot — I shoot no more — The Republic takes my guns — How I worked on the grass — The shawl — *Latet anguis in herba* — Recollections of my lawsuit — M de Vatismenil — The other advocate — My two brothers Henri and Jean Pierre. — A Dutch General and a French Colonel — Why it was a good thing that the Colonel retired — United — Madame Gaigneau wishes to be called Madame de Kock. — Count d'Orsay — A letter from Bulwer Lytton — I don't think any more of the lawsuit I lost — My philosophy — The animals I love — Frontin or the talking cat

It was two years after the revolution of 1830 one day in the month of May. My wife and I were at Romainville. We had lunched—not at the *Tourne bride* inn for the *Tournebride* was dear if it was good and as we were not rich we were economical—at a small restaurant which had recently been opened on the Paris road where one could get an excellent dish of sheep's trotters in white sauce and

where there was a fine skittle-ground, and were just about to enter the wood, when passing in front of a small house on this road, which was close to Robert's place, our eyes fell simultaneously on a notice which was hanging to the shutier of a window, bearing this inscription "For Sale"

"See here," said my wife, stopping, "this house is for sale"

"Well?"

"Well, you who are so fond of this spot What can a little house like that be worth? Not much money, for certain"

"I don't know about that"

"Well, we can in any case look over it and ask the price That won't bind us, just to look over it"

"That won't bind us, just to look over it" Women have arguments of their own "That won't bind us" On the contrary that does just bind you, because ten times out of twelve, one wants to possess, what one has wanted to see

But the cottage was so attractive, facing the South, with a garden in front. The garden was small also, about fifty paces long by forty broad But that was quite enough for us With a big garden, one must have a gardener, and we did not want a gardener. I should think not It was we, we alone who would plant our flowers and water them My wife could already see herself at it

We knocked at the door of the cottage An old peasant opened

What do you want?

'Is not this house for sale? We should like to look at it'

Oh All right. Come in I say, Françoise, here are some people come to look at the house'

"Well show it them What an ass you are, Cartery Can't you see I'm washing Do you think I'm going to bother about it?

But you know I've got to go to the field to hoe the potatoes'

You'll hoe them afterwards These people are not going to stay here all day It's not the Louvre that you've got to show them'

M and Mme Cartery did not receive the people who came to look over the house for sale in a very amiable manner Why? We soon learned the reason

We went into the garden where on the right, near the well the woman was engaged on her interesting washing She did not condescend even to look at us

May I ask you, sir said I to the husband if this house is yours?

He made a face

It was mine only three weeks ago said he but, to day it's not mine any more.

Oh and why is it for sale if you have already sold it?

I didn't sell it It's the man who sold it to me who has taken it back and wants to sell it again

"How do you mean — 'Taken it back?'"

"Why, what I say Because I didn't pay This is what's up Do you know M Bernard?"

"Isn't he a former stockbroker who owns the Romainville forest?"

"That's right Well, it's M Bernard who had this house built and many more in this district. It's a business of his, to build houses which he sells at so much a year Do you understand?"

"Oh, quite well"

"So that as long as you pay him, he doesn't bother, but if you stop paying him, oh, then it's another story He chuck's you out like a bundle of dirty linen And, unfortunately, you can do nothing, because you've signed a paper which proves that M Bernard has the right to take back his house if you can't give the money agreed upon Ah, if I hadn't signed!"

"And what did you sign for, you idiot?" cried Madame Carter from her washtub "I told you not to sign"

"But if I hadn't signed, we shouldn't have had the house!"

"Well, and since we haven't the house after you did sign! So I was quite right to tell you not to give your signature"

I now understood why the Carterys were in such a bad humour They had been turned out for not paying, and so they cared very little whether this house, which did not belong to them any more,

found a purchaser or not And however ready I might have been to pity them if their troubles had left them polite if not honest their rude tone and disagreeable manners inspired me with but little pity So I asked no more questions and devoted my attention to the house which I inspected with my wife There was on the groundfloor a room which could be used as a parlour also a dining room a kitchen and a cellarette and upstairs two bed rooms and three closets And that was all

'It's very small,' said I to Eliza.

'Small, oh no There's plenty of room to live in here You take the room on the front for yourself I'll take the room at the back'

'And the children?'

'Henry can sleep in a closet near you, and Caroline will sleep in my room'

'And the maid?'

'The maid in a closet like Henry?'

'But these closets have sloping roofs They'll be stifled in there You, yourself—your room has a sloping roof also'

'Bah, in the country What's that matter?'

'Ah, so you think that it's more pleasant to be stifled in the country than in Paris?'

'No, what I mean is that there is more air in the country and that—consequently Have you looked at your room how pretty it is There's a balcony to the window and there's a splendid view from the balcony You'll be able to inhale the scent of the

flowers there, before you go to bed ”

“The dining-room is very poky ”

“We’ll dine in the drawing-room, when we have any guests ”

“There’s no cellar ”

“But there’s a cellarette ”

“The well in the garden is very ugly ”

“We’ll hide it with creepers ”

“Oh, you’ve an answer to every objection Well, so you like this house This cottage rather, for it’s more a cottage than a house ”

“I like it immensely I should like to be in it already Just think, how well you’ll be able to work here And how happy the children will be To begin with, I’m quite certain that it will be a splendid thing for their health to pass the summer in the country Ask the man the price ”

I turned round to M Cartery, who was waiting impatiently in the garden, for us to let him go off to his potatoes

“Do you know the price of this house ”

“By gum, do I know it? It would be a queer thing if I didn’t know, seeing as how I have paid a fifth of it And I wouldn’t so much mind if my thousand francs had been given back to me, when I was kicked out ”

“A thousand francs So they want five thousand francs for it?”

“Yes, five thousand With the legal expenses, you can call it five thousand four hundred francs

Oh, they're not giving it away

"And if we made up our minds to buy it, whom should we have to see?"

M. Bernard in Paris.

Do you know his address?"

No I don't but if you want it, all you've got to do is to ask next door, at the *Tournebride* inn. M. Robert is sure to know it he is. When M. Bernard comes to Romillyville he always lunches at the *Tournebride*.

Right! Thanks and goodbye

We got M. Bernard's address. As we were returning to Paris my wife and I talked of nothing but of our house. And the road seemed long to us both. For in spite of all the objections I had made I too, was very much pleased with the little house. It was true that two hundred pounds—for I intended to pay ready money, having always had a horror of debts—two hundred and sixteen or twenty pounds including expenses, was a sum. But for some time past, my novels and my plays had been bringing me in some money. I had been able to put by something with my *La Femme le Mari et l'Amant* at the Nouveautés and my *L'Homme de la nature et L'Homme police* at the Variétés. And I had besides a big play in hand for 1832 a play taken from my novel *Le Coeur*, which I was to write in collaboration with Duprety. All that was troubling us was what to call the play for we knew that the Censor would not allow us to use the title of the

novel It was only at the last rehearsals that we found a title, or rather, to render to Cæsar what is Cæsar's, that Arnal, who played one of the principal parts in the play, found it for us

"Call it *Un de Plus*," said he with a laugh Neither Dupeuty nor I said anything, but we flung our arms round his neck And it was well worth it It was a real find, this title, which in three words, said all that was to be said

But to return to *our house*, *our house* which really became *our house* in a fortnight from the day on which we had first visited it Oh, there was no delay about it In a fortnight, all legal formalities had been carried out, the Carterys had vacated the premises,—and we were free to take possession

How quickly that first year of our life in 'our home' at Romainville passed by If it be true, according to the opinion of certain fanciful legists, that "property is a theft," it must be admitted that this kind of theft is very excusable because of the pleasure it gives those who are guilty of it We furnished our house as simply as possible, for having already so taxed my purse, I could not and would not go to further expense So it was I, myself, who, helped by my son, papered all the walls and stained all the floors Whilst I was doing this, Eliza began to map out the garden

"This must be a basket of flowers, next year," she said

And she carried out what she had promised The

next year when the lilacs the seringas the rose trees and the honeysuckle, which she had planted were in bloom and all the beds were full of flowers of every kind people used to stop in the road to admire our garden

It was I who watered the garden. I no longer found the well so ugly—it supplied me with the means of refreshing to their fill my beds and shrub berries My beds and shrubberies yes but not my self nor mine That was one of the drawbacks of the place at that time There was no water to drnl Now a days water carriers bring water from the Seine at Belleville and deliver it every day at the houses in The Lilacs but in 1832 and up to 1836, we were forced to fetch our supplies from a spring in the fields a good way off Henry attended to this and did not grumble at it because when he came back bringing the water in a little barrel on a wheel barrow he used to rest, whenever he felt tired and that was always when he was under some fruit tree or near some field of raspberries or of strawberries

When it was fine we used to breakfast and dine in the garden in an arbour which I had manufactured In the evening we used to sit in front of our house and watch the people going by just like the small shopkeepers in the Marais quarter of Paris And the small shopkeepers of the Marais are not such fools they do what it gives them pleasure to do We often also used to go out for a walk at night in the wood or in the fields Not too late however, for

my wife was rather nervous. Indeed, when we first came to live in the country, she spent some sleepless nights at Romainville. The deep silence that prevailed frightened her. And then she found that the walls round our garden were not high enough to keep thieves out. I had bought a gun so as to reassure her. One night she came, all trembling, into my room.

"My dear!"

"What's the matter?"

"Robbers! I assure you there are robbers!"

"In the house?"

"No, in the lane opposite my window, on the other side of M^{me} Nonclair's house" (M^{me} Nonclair, a man of private means, was our neighbour on the left, and Robert, the restaurant-keeper, was our neighbour on the right) "I have heard them walking about, there are at least seven or eight of them. I am sure they are getting ready to climb over our walls."

It seemed to me very surprising that a gang of burglars should be making ready—in such an open manner (for had not my wife heard them walking about?)—to break into my neighbour's house. However, I got up and, carrying my gun, followed Eliza to her window. It was a dark night. No moon, no stars. We listened, with straining ears, for ten minutes. Nothing.

"You have made a mistake," said I.

"Oh, no, I am sure I have not. Listen. Ah, do you hear now?"

And the fact was I did hear a low murmur of voices The voices of men whispering

Fire a shot, said my wife

But

But they'll see that we are on the look out, and will clear off I beg you my friend fire fire'

I fired

Directly afterwards there was the loud noise of steps hurrying down the lane like the steps of frightened folk running wildly in every direction To be sure I must have terrified the gang

They're running away said my wife

I don't know if they're running away but, at any rate they don't seem to be running very far They are stopping in the lane'

Perhaps you have wounded one of them The leader of the gang perhaps

I should be very much surprised if that were so for I shot in the air

Suddenly the burglars seemed to quiet down They stopped running At the same time a loud voice cried out

"Who was it who fired?

Don't answer said Eliza

'Yes I must said I I seem to know that voice Then aloud

It's I who fired said I

Who? I? You're Paul? (They used to call me M Paul at Romainville)

'Yes I I'm Paul

"And why did you fire?"

"Because, because—in the dark, my wife thought,
and I thought So you're not burglars?"

"Burglars" What a joke Why we're National
Guards watching over the safety of the village"

National Guards! Deplorable mistake I had
fired at the patrol, or rather, and fortunately so, over
the heads of the patrol, for, counting the killed and
wounded, there was nobody killed at all in this ter-
rible adventure It only cost me a few bottles of
wine with which next day I treated the National
Guards—peasants, neighbours of ours, for the most
part people from whom we bought our milk and our
vegetables The wine was in compensation for the
shock I had given them with my gunshot

For the rest, from that night on, my wife slept
more peacefully, quieted by the thought that she
had no longer to fear burglars, since the rural Na-
tional Guards were watching over our homes

On Sundays, we used to go and watch the peas-
ants dancing at the Romainville forest ball, and when
friends were with us, we used to join in the rustic
quadrilles The ball-room, situated opposite the
gamekeeper's cottage, was nothing more nor less
than a big open place, with a cemented floor, un-
der the shadow of oaks and chestnut trees The or-
chestra consisted of a violin, a violincello and a trom-
bone For seats, there were wooden benchés The
lighting consisted of a dozen lanterns hung on the

branches of the trees Well I assure you that the Romainville ball was very amusing very amusing indeed because of the queer mugs' and also the pretty faces that one saw there And then in those days the peasants round Paris were not nasty and rude as almost all of them are now a days their backs did not get up when they met with *bourgeois*, and if one of us bumped up against them in dancing they did not shake their fists and call us *aristos*

Amedee de Beauplan who owned a charming villa in the forest about two stones throws from my cottage near Madame de Montesson's* forme chateau used often to come with his wife and son to watch the Romainville and Bagnolet lads and lasses dance Amedee de Beauplan was a clever man and a good fellow He was a composer of light music and has left behind him a number of tunes which in my opinion are worth a good many grand opera tunes His *Dormez dormez chères amours* is a delicious melody his *Père Trinquefort* is a small gem I had made his acquaintance in Paris in society we became more intimate at Romainville His wit was perhaps rather biting, but at least it was original I have spent many pleasant hours of an evening listening to him as he sang to me accompanying himself on the piano the song or ditty which he had composed during the day It was at

* Th Marquise de Montesson whom the Duc d'Orléans grandson of the Regent had as it was said married secretly had caused this château to be built during the Empire on the spot where to day rises the fortress of Romainville (P de K.)

his house that I had the pleasure of meeting for the first time, an actress, Mademoiselle Plessy, who was a mere child at that time, but who was soon to win a great reputation That was in 1834 How old was Mlle Plessy in 1834? I do not remember, and even if I did remember it, I should not say what it was, for it is only men who do not like women who know their ages All that I can say is, that she was very pretty She often used to spend two or three days with M and Mme de Beauplan One morning when I was shooting over the wood, I suddenly met the young artist at the corner of a path and I declare that I thought that she was a hamadryad The comparison is a queer one, but it is quite true Does Madame Plessy-Arnould remember this meeting of ours? Does she remember that, like a courteous sportsman and a friendly neighbour, I offered her for her luncheon-table, six sparrows which I had just shot? No, no doubt She has forgotten this trivial, this very trivial incident in her life I have not forgotten it, and I don't deny, now that I think of it, that I wish I was back in the wood of Romainville, in 1834, saying to Sylvania Plessy, my hamadryad

"Mademoiselle, will you accept my bag, six humble sparrows? A man shoots what he can and where he can M Scribe would offer you partridges I offer you sparrows"

For, during the second year of my stay at Romainville, I had begun to shoot M Bernard, who

owned the wood had given me permission to shoot and hunt over all his estate, and I took an evilad vantage of his permission and so did my son to massacre sparrows finches and such small fry As a matter of fact there was no other game to be had and so we could massacre nothing else

You would have done better *sw* you, to have killed nothing it all Well that is just what we said to ourselves in the end One day we got a shamed of killing the little birds who sing so prettily and who were so tough and so tasteless after they had been fried So we laid down our guns After the insurrection of June, under the second Republic when as a precautionary measure the Government summoned all good citizens to take their arms no matter what they might be, to certain *diputs* which were designated I sent my gun and my son's gun—a small child's one barrelled gun—to the mayor's office at Belleville It was understood that they were to be given back I can only say that I never saw them again Republics certainly do keep all that they lay their hands upon

Thus I gardened I shot I took walks I danced and I paid calls at my country seat, but I also worked Pleasure has never interfered with my work During the months of May and June I used to work at home in my room Sometimes a good deal of noise was made be'ow in the parlour or in the garden, but noise has never prevented me from

writing People can talk, laugh, and even sing in the room next to my study, that has never stopped the flow of my thoughts

When the weather was very hot, I used to turn the wood into my study My wife had kept for me a large old linen shawl, for which she had no further use, for this purpose I used to spread the shawl out on the grass, to keep off the damp, and then, stretched out full length upon it, face downwards, I used to write for three or four hours together, without any fatigue

A disagreeable experience, however, put a stop to this method of working One afternoon as, with my shawl spread out upon the grass, and I upon the shawl, according to my wont, I began to write, an odour which had not the slightest analogy with that of lily of the valley, violently assailed my olfactory organs, and counselled me to betake my camp elsewhere I hasten then to get up, and, with my shawl in one hand, and my manuscript and inkpot in the other, I search for a spot untainted by the tracks of tormented overtaken travellers Under the hazel-trees? Yes, the grass is tender and close, a very velvet lawn! Here I shall be as comfortable as a king Again I spread out my shawl, and again I stretch out myself upon it Hum! Hum! Fate is unkind to me to-day The same yes, the very same odour of a moment ago! Gad, the wood, it seems, has had to-day the visits of many a tormented traveller Let's go still further afield In this glade!

Yes here at all events I have nothing to fear Not a shadow of a trace of anything that's nasty here

Third attempt and yet the same result! Its enough to make a man despair I determine to go in and work at home

Alas! In my own garden indoors I find myself pursued by this same odour *sur generis* which had driven me from the wood Whence came it! Ah whence came it! You have doubtless divined the end of the story Well, yes it was the shawl it was in the shawl itself! In carrying about my poor old shawl—which I had been careless enough to spread out on the very spot where I ought not to have spread it—I was carrying both the cause of the odour, and its effect Horrible cause! Ghastly effect

I laughed afterwards about it and I hope however realistic you may find this tale that you will laugh also but from that moment, I gave up working in the grass in the wood Experience had dearly taught me that if *latet anguis in herba* there is something more repugnant still than a serpent that grass is capable of concealing

My friends used often to come and see me at Romainville they came still oftener after an action which I brought against one of my publishers an action which I lost and which not only upset my modest treasury but which during the two years through which it dragged was also an unceasing cause of sadness and discouragement Oh! those

two years Even to-day, when I think of them, I shudder I see once more all those legal gentlemen whom I had to meet every day about my 'case,' and my advocate also—a man of great merit no doubt (it was M de Vatisménil, formerly Minister of Education under Charles X)—who had so cold, so severe, a countenance And my solicitor, who was always so busy, that when I wanted ten minutes' conversation with him, I had to wait two hours And my business man, an ex-notary from the country, who had been commissioned by one of my friends to advise me, to pilot me over the ocean of litigation, and who was a good pilot only after a copious luncheon Which meant, that at least twice a week, I had to stuff him with beefsteaks and claret I see the Palais de Justice once more Does not its very name chill the sturdiest heart? The lobby, where litigants walk up and down like souls in torment The court-room, with its judges, with their heads in their hands, as though they were asleep, and the presiding judge, with his head against the back of his seat, as though he were dreaming I see "the other side," once more Yesterday, "the other side" was calling me "his dear Paul de Kock," to-day he looks at me in a saucy and threatening manner I hear his advocate What! this is a purely civil lawsuit, so why does his advocate, in the pleading against me, load me with insults? "Paul de Kock Bah Who, after all is Paul de Kock?—A petty scribbler for the mob, whose talent is every day called into question and

not without reason And as for the man—”

What, sir, you are not satisfied with attacking me,—though I do not understand why you should attack me, since it is my work that has enriched your client since it is my work that you claim in his name as your property—you are not satisfied I say with saying and repeating over and over again that my work is worse than commonplace but you must also turn me into ridicule and abuse me and insult me as a man Yes! And, I, sitting in my place have to listen to these insults this abuse without saying a word If I were to retort my hostile advocate would order me to hold my tongue He has the right to be insolent and a har, and I have no right to cry out to him “You are a scoundrel”

Well, I did not want to think of all that why have I remembered it? To shudder as I did formerly with indignation and with rage! Let me calm myself It is now close upon forty years since this unlucky lawsuit took place let us forget the wounds it inflicted, long since cicatrized and let us only think of the friends who helped me to bind up these wounds

My brothers Henri and Jean Pierre de Koch, to begin with And here—there will never be a better one—is an opportunity for me to keep my promise and to speak with particulars about my two brothers on my father's side I take it readily It will comfort me to have to tell you of these good and noble fellows

I told you, in Chapter IV of this book, that, on their return to Holland in 1795, Henri and Jean-Pierre had been adopted, as its children, by the Batavian Republic

From 1795 on, Henri was employed at the Ministry of War of Holland, in 1797, he went with the ambassador Van Grasweld to the Congress of Rastadt, and soon afterwards went with him as second secretary to the Cisalpine Republic, but, during their journey there, this Republic practically ceased to exist, and Henri remained in Paris, attached to the Embassy under Schimmelpenninck. On his return to Holland, he became the confidential secretary of Admiral de Winter, with whom he undertook a diplomatic journey in the Mediterranean and visited Tunis, Tripoli, Algiers, Malaga and Lisbon. In 1804, he was appointed colonel, chief of Admiral Verhuel's staff, and fiscal of the little fleet which was sent, under English fire, from Flushing to Ostend, where an army was encamped under the orders of Marshal Davoust. In 1806, he left for Java with Grasweld, whom the great Pensioner Schimmelpenninck had appointed Governor-General of the Dutch possessions in the East Indies, but in consequence of the accession of King Louis Bonaparte to the Dutch throne, Governor Van Grasveld, who had got no further than Philadelphia, was recalled with his staff, and General Daendels was appointed Governor-General of the Dutch Indies in his place. De Kock, who had been charged with a special mission,

and whose name was not mentioned in the order of recall thought it his duty to continue the long and dangerous journey alone and travelled under false names and qualities to escape the English cruisers. However, when he arrived in Batavia he found that his dismissal had preceded him. The ex-governor Wisse who was still on duty appointed him his chief of the staff and allowed him to keep his rank as colonel. Daendels soon arrived; he knew de Kock and had been friends with his father and he allowed him to keep his rank and his place. He took part in an expedition against a province, the chief of which had revolted. In 1810 Jansens took Daendels' place. In 1811, the colony was seized by the English who sent the Governor and de Kock chief of the staff to England where they remained prisoners till 1814.

At this date de Kock returned to Holland and fought in the 1815 campaign as a general in the service of King William I. He afterwards returned to the Dutch Indies, where he was appointed lieutenant general and lieutenant governor general under Van Der Capelle the Governor General. He commanded the land and sea forces and in 1821 he dethroned and made prisoner the Sultan of Palembang against whom two unsuccessful expeditions had previously been sent. In the end he established peace in the country.

He was recalled in 1830 by the King of Holland, who promised to appoint him Governor General and to arrange with him for the reorganization of Java.

but the outbreak of the war with France caused him to be appointed commander of Zealand. He established his headquarters in Flushing and remained there till 1837. He was then created Minister of the Interior and Grand Chancellor of the two royal orders of the Netherlands. Shortly after the abdication of William I, he retired from the Ministry with the title of Baron and the rank of Grand Officer of the royal orders, the Netherlands Lion, and the William.

He had twelve children, several of whom hold high places in Holland to-day.

Jean-Pierre, my second brother, was appointed sub-lieutenant in the Dutch army in 1795, became a lieutenant in 1799 and captain in King Louis Bonaparte's Royal Guard in 1806. He fought in the 1812, 1813 and 1814 campaigns, attached himself definitely to the French service under the Restoration, having naturalized himself a Frenchman, and retired in 1831, as Colonel of the 31st Infantry.

My brothers, as has been seen, had both made their way, in different military careers. And the difference between the flags under which they served might have proved fatal to them, for, as a result of political events, had the colonel not retired after the 1830 Revolution, his duty as a French soldier might perhaps have forced him to march against his elder brother and his mother-country. I have also told you, that as long as they lived, I remained on affectionate term with my brothers. It is true that

after 18, I, it was only Jean Pierre that I often saw
He was living in Versailles with his wife and chil-
dren and used often to come and see me in Paris
As to Henri our intercourse was limited, up to 18,6
to an exchange of letters

Well, in July 1836 I had the joy of embracing
both Jean Pierre and Henri, on the same day at
Romainville. I had written to Henri some weeks
previously to tell him of the unfortunate issue of my
lawsuit and he came in person to offer me his con-
solations and his purse. It was the first time that we
had met together again since 1793 and we did not
tire of looking at each other and of embracing. My
mother who was, of course present at this inter-
view, shed tears. The General it appeared, was
very like our father. It's he she kept saying, it's
Conrad de Koch in the flesh. Ah I must mention
here that after the death of M Gaigneau my mother
had insisted on resuming the name of de Koch. She
had perhaps no strict legal right to do so but—

M Gaigneau,' said she, exists no longer there
is no more Madame Gaigneau. I prefer to be Ma-
dame de Koch. I regret that I did not always re-
main Madame de Koch, so I now become Madame
de Koch once more'

What could one say to that?

Besides my brothers, I may mention amongst
those who hastened to offer me their assistance
knowing me to be badly hit Count d Orsay, an ami-

able English gentleman, with whom, for some years past, I had been on terms of courteous intercourse I thanked the Count With the help of my brothers, I was in a position to pay over to my victorious enemy the sum which Dame Justice had condemned me to pay, as damages for the injury—which he had caused me Before we parted, Count d'Orsay asked me to write a few lines to Bulwer-Lytton, the celebrated English novelist, promising to convey the letter to him with his own hands "Bulwer-Lytton," said Count d'Orsay, "has the greatest admiration for your books"

I wrote to Bulwer A week later, I received the following letter

"Albany, London
"Oct 20th, 1836

"Dear Sir,

"Permit me to express my sense of the honor you have done me in the letter I have received thro' the friendly offices of Count d'Orsay I am charmed to find that my long cherished view of the true tendency of your writings is supported by your own aims and ends Perhaps, for it is well to speak frankly, I may regret that the irresistible dictate of a rich and unrivalled humour should sometimes have pursued a moral end thro' means easily mistaken by the herd, and still more, that your views of that morality which relates to the sexes, should be essentially different from those common in this country—where

it is outward morality that is rigidly inculcated I mention this not from the presumption of reproach but because I have found some difficulty in clearing the way to a just appreciation of your lofty merits, the beautiful goodness of heart and the profound and often magic philosophy that forms the under current of a comic stream more racy and powerful than that of any other writer I am aware of In the *Edinburgh Review* of January next I trust to embody my views of your genius in a manner that I trust will be agreeable to you Whatever qualification may occur will arise not from myself but the scruples of the editor But I trust to render such qualification unnecessary

I scarcely know how to condole with you on your losses Genius is given to man as a compensation for a thousand evils and afflictions that seem almost invariably to accompany it And your genius takes so bright and benignant a view of life that I trust it is but the reflection of a joyous temper and an all sufficing heart

Pardon me for addressing you in English I am not sufficiently acquainted with your own language to trust to my knowledge of it for the expression of my enthusiastic admiration and profound respect

I am my dear sir

Your most obliged and devoted Servt
E Lytton Bulwer'

Bulwer was right I am unable I do not know

how to be sad for any length of time After the lapse of a few weeks, I had forgotten all about the action I had lost I had sought after fortune, and that under outside pressure, for, as for myself, I had not the slightest ambition Two hundred and forty pounds a year in my old age, and to be able to work up to my last hour, was all that I wanted I had counted on large profits, realized in a literary speculation which I thought I had every right to patronize, and, on the contrary, it turned out that another had a better right than I, so that to punish me for having made a mistake I was stripped of a part of what I possessed Well, there remained to me courage, health and youth—for I was still young in 1836—there remained to me those whom I loved and who loved me, my wife, my mother, my children and my brothers, there remained to me my pen, my little apartment on the boulevard Saint-Martin, my little house at Romainville, my cat . Don't laugh at me Amongst animals, it is cats that I am fond of And why not? You say that cats are ungrateful, selfish, capricious animals, which have no affection for their masters but only for the houses where they live Those are old stereotypes, worth only their price as old metal I maintain that cats are as capable of affection as dogs, and are superior to dogs in gaiety, intelligence and gracefulness I have owned cats which I would not have sold for their weight in gold , especially one called Frontin, who lived from 1830 to 1841 Frontin was no cat, in goodness of heart

he was a poodle in sobriety a camel in intelligence a monkey He used to follow me in the summer when I took my walks in the woods of Romainville In the winter he never left my study Curled up all day long on a cushion near my writing table he slept as long as I was working—or pretended to sleep so as not to disturb me, but as soon as I rose he used also to get up, arching his back and fixing his yellow eyes on me, as if to say Now we can have a chat, can't we? And indeed we used to chat. I petted him and talked to him and he used to answer me He had different mews for each thing to ask for food for drink for permission to go out, for leave to jump on my knees or to lick my hand to wish me good morning, in my bed, and good evening at nights

Well I have shown you that I am a philosopher and I am not aware that a philosopher is forbidden to draw his contempt for adversity even from the affection of cats

But I have written enough about my Abbotsford Romainville Number 1 We will now if you please pass on to my Romainville Abbotsford Number 2

CHAPTER X

A man is never satisfied — “Raise your roof” — The house of my dreams — And there is a billiard-table — We enter upon my Abbotsford, Number 2 — The advantage of having a hair merchant as a tenant — Why I wear a moustache — Sudden catastrophe — My wife’s death — A word about Caroline and Henry, my children — The story about Victor Hugo and the 4500 quarts of rum — Joy once more at Romainville — I buy a wood — My theatre — What used to be played there and how it was played — The play, a ball and supper — My usual guests at Romainville — Charles Monselet comes too late — Old age and the gout

For it is quite true that a man is never satisfied, and that, indifferent to the wisdom of the proverb, when one is well off, one wants to be better off

We had spent ten happy summers in my cottage at Romainville, when I began to wish to own a real house and a real garden And I dared to state just now that I was not an ambitious man In justification I will say, that, as a matter of fact, as time went on, my country house became too small for us all My children had grown up, my son was a man, my daughter was a young lady, and really, if as little children I had been able to make them sleep, during six months in the year, for want of room, in closets where they knocked their heads against the ceiling, I could not continue to do so, now that they were grown up, without acting as an unnatural father

If you wish me to love the paternal roof' Henry used to say to me, raise it a metre And he was quite in the right

Now it happened that there was quite close to my little cottage a house which its owner a dealer in Rouen goods called Salmon wanted to sell in 1842 It was the house of my dreams placed between two gardens, in each of which my little plot of ground could have danced a saraband And there were gardens planted with ornamental trees, and fruit trees and vines in full bearing In one was an arbour in which forty people could dine comfortably in the other was a lawn where a company of national guards could have man oeuvred with perfect ease And there was a rustic kiosk in one of the gardens' And two entrance one on the South side, opening in the avenue of the chateau and the other on the North opening on to the Pantin road And the house' There were four bedrooms a drawing room a dining room a study, a bathroom kitchen pantry billiard room—a billiard room I was to have the billiard table if I bought the billiard room Now I am very fond of billiards Between ourselves I am fond of all games but I have already told you of my tastes in this respect

I abbreviate The price which M Salmon asked for his house was not excessive I paid him the sum and in May 1842 we took possession of our new domain my Abbotsford Number 2 I kept on my

number one, however It would have grieved me to part with this little house So I let it It was recently tenanted by a dealer in hair, and this was very convenient when I wished to renew mine For I won't hide the fact, that for a long time past, I have been wearing what the French actors call a "head-warmer," a wig Nature had given me hair , time and work, I suppose, also have taken it away , and so, not out of coquetry, but so as to avoid chronic colds in the head, like father Ducantal in *Les Saltimbanques*, I have repaired as far as possible, time's outrages and labour's wounds And whilst I am making these confessions, I may as well explain why, - at sixty years of age, I began to wear a moustache, an ornament (if ornament it be), which till then I had always despised Ah, well, it's only another dodge to hide the disagreeable work of Time I have no more teeth, and a moustache, covering the upper lip, prevents people from seeing that the upper lip covers nothing The only consequence is that my friends say that I look like an old general I don't mind such a comparison in the least, It's not everybody who can be an old general

I am joking, and I almost blame myself for this levity, when the progress of my story is about to oblige me to recall the memory of one of my greatest griefs, the death of my wife Oh, I loved her well, my Eliza I loved her—not as I see so many men pretending to love the partners of their choice,

with words and phrases On the contrary I loved her without telling her so and I had no need to tell her that my heart was hers that her happiness was my delight to assure her that these things were so Who was she? When had I married her? That is no business of yours I am not in a confessional here I am relating my memories A thing of which I can assure you is that she was of women the most honourable and the most worthy and that I married her because I adored her She had spent many an evil day with me without complaining winter days, when we had no fire because we had no money with which to buy wood summer days when we took the air at our window because she had no bon net, or no dress to walk out in Often I must admit it, I had given her cause for sorrow for she was jealous and had often reason to be so—but even then it was in secret that she used to weep and when I reproached her—for I used to reproach her—for having red eyes—she would quickly try to smile saying But you are mistaken If my eyes are red it's perhaps because I have been too long at work

And the fact is that at times she used to work very hard—and that it was necessary that she should do so

And it was just when life was beginning to smile on her just when she was calm and happy in the present and the future that death took her while still quite young She was forty years of age Oh it

seemed as if a secret presentiment of her approaching end struck her on the very first day that we entered our new home

She was walking in the garden

"Are you pleased?" said I

She made no answer, but stooped to pick a flower

"Do you hear?" I asked "Are you pleased with your big house?"

She turned her face towards me A tear was on her cheek

"Do not scold me," she murmured "Don't be angry"

"But—"

"But I am a silly woman There! *I loved the little house better*"

It was September 22nd, 1842 I had gone to Paris after dinner, to keep a business-appointment, and as it happened that on the next day but one, there was to be given the first performance of a play taken from Eugène Sue's novel *Mathilde*, at the Porte-Saint-Martin Theatre, I had arranged to go and ask the brothers Cogniard, the managers, for seats

I had, however, intended to return to sleep at Romainville, as Eliza was not feeling very well that day and had complained of pains in her head But it was she, herself, who had opposed my wish

"No, no," she said to me, "you may perhaps be kept late at the Porte-Saint-Martin getting places,

and I don't want you to come back here after ten o'clock at night. There are often bad characters about at night on the road So you had better come home to morrow

'But you are not well Supposing you get worse in the night'

Oh, no fear of that. I had a head ache it's over now so don't be afraid"

'So don't be afraid And that night towards midnight the poor woman dragging herself as best she could from her room to her daughter's chamber woke her up saying Quick quick Caroline! I think that I am going to die.'

Caroline was at that time barely twelve years old Imagine this unhappy child with only a servant to help her for by a cruel fatality, Henry also was away from Romainville that night imagine the poor little girl on her knees by the side of the bed on which her mother is dying of a congestion of the brain hearing her repeat with a voice ever more stifled I am dying And oh, oh my God your father and your brother are away

I was fetched at two o'clock in the morning, in Paris by a good fellow of a workman who had been dispatched by the servant, and who ran all the way I could not believe in the extent of my misfortune Can a man believe that those whom he loves *can* die? Those one loves seem to be ones self—one feels so strong why should one despair And yet how long that nocturnal cab

drive from the Boulevard Saint-Martin down to there seemed to me I had given gold to the driver, but I had not been able to give him a good horse I arrive at last—I rush in Ah, that face that, but a few hours ago, I had seen smiling, was like marble like the face of a statue representing the last and fearful expression of a terrible anguish Those lips which till now had pressed mine—were icy cold Those eyes which ever told me 'I love you'—were without expression Yes, they had an expression, a terrible expression, the look of the dead A look which those who have seen it never forget, a look which seems to say "I have no more tears, have tears for me "

And what added to my despair was the thought that if I had remained with her, I might perhaps have been able to save her

We buried her in the village cemetery at Romainville The peasants carried her coffin in turns They all loved her, she was so good My children followed her to the tomb with my friends As for me, I was alone in my room, still wondering if indeed my Eliza had left me for ever

. . .
.

It is now three weeks since I laid down my pen and stopped working at this book Pardon me, reader, for look you, at seventy-six a man cannot

with impunity rest his eyes on a tomb I was sad
I wished to recover my composure

I had seven children by my wife Only two lived
a son and a daughter Henry and Caroline

Of Caroline I will say but one word which sums
up all the praises I might bestow upon her She has
rejected ten offers of marriage because she did not
wish to leave me in my old age in the hands of
strangers

Of Henry, who has as a man always acted to
wards me as a loving respectful and devoted son,
and of whom as a novelist I will say that I reserve
it to myself to speak of him at length in the chapter
in which I shall deal from my point of view with the
good and bad qualities of the writers of our age For
after all I suppose, Paul de Koch is not forbidden
to say of Henry de Koch—because Henry de Koch
is his son—what he thinks of his talent good and
bad and good rather than bad let me say so at
once without any shame

One thing is certain and that is that my son owes
his reputation to his industry and to his talent alone
His name is Paul like my own, so he might sign
'Paul de Koch fils' The publisher who bought his
first novel offered him an additional forty pounds
if he would use that name but he refused

I may or I may not succeed said he but
I won't carry on a business I will try to establish
one for myself '

Now as sons go to-day, perhaps more credit than one thinks is due to Henry de Kock, for having refused to be the son of his father in anything more than filial affection

Like myself, Henry earned his first money as a commercial clerk I was not rich enough to provide for all his wants and all his pleasures So, whilst seeking his way in letters, he bravely took a desk in a private business called *L'Entrepôt des Douanes* or *Entrepôt des Marais*, and remained there till his pen as a novelist and dramatic author was sufficiently productive to warrant him in casting aside his pen as a quilldriver—which occurred about ten years ago

For the rest, he was not worked to death at this *Entrepôt des Marais* I sometimes used to go there and see him, in company with a friend, for an excellent reason He had to keep an account of the liquids, all liquids of the first order, foreign wines of warranted authenticity, Madeira, Port, Sherry, Pakaret, Marsala, genuine Rum and Tafia

Varin, especially, Varin the *Vaudevilliste*, used to like to come with me to the Entrepôt, to study the body of such and such an Italian or Spanish wine

During one of these visits, Henry told us the story of something that had happened in his office It is worth repeating, as one of the greatest poets—the greatest of all, perhaps, but that political passion slightly soils his genius—played a part in it in spite of himself

When goods—as is known—are delivered at the bonded stores—such as the *Entrepot*—a form of receipt is sent with them and on this receipt is written the name of the consignee

Well one day in 1845 or 1846 twelve barrels of tafia (a kind of rum) sent from la Martinique—each of a capacity of 3,0 to 400 quarts were sent to the stores in the Marais accompanied by the form of receipt at the head of which was written

To
M V Hugo

Paris'

The head clerk who prided himself on his knowledge of literature gave a cry of delight as he read this address

"Henry" cried he to my son Look here—twelve barrels of tafia sent to Victor Hugo

Twelve barrels Heavens! How many quarts?
'Altogether—4500 quarts'

Four thousand five hundred quarts Heavens!
What will he do with so much rum the great man?

That's his business My business is to inform him of his rum and that is what I am going to do What luck if he comes in person to pay the duty I am dying to know him! Oh I'd readily give twenty francs to see him face to face

The letter of advice was despatched to the Place Royale where Victor Hugo was living at that time but contrary to the hopes of the Hugo-worshipping head clerk it was not the poet who came to the

bonded warehouse, but a sort of steward who brought the money for the duty on one barrel

And so on for about six months On two further occasions, Victor Hugo's steward returned to fetch the tafia, but never the poet showed his face Olympio persisted in hiding himself in the clouds

Towards the end of the sixth month, in the month of July, after the third barrel of tafia had been delivered to the great man, a gentleman presented himself one morning at the entrepôt and addressing himself to the manager

"Sir," said he "I have come to pay the duty on twelve barrels of Martinique tafia, branded V H which were delivered at the warehouse in February last "

"Very well, sir Your name, if you please"

"Vincent Hugo"

"Vin—cent Hugo!"

The head-clerk turned pale, a terrible thought struck him He examines his books and the bills of shipment which Mr Vincent Hugo lays before him Oh Heavens! The tafia delivered to Victor Hugo is the tafia claimed by his homonym, in all but the Christian name

Surprised at his confusion, the stranger asks

"What is the matter Has anything happened to my tafia?"

"No, that is to say, yes Your address was not on the receipt, was it, sir?"

"No, they could not put it there I do not live in

Paris and only come here for a few months every year to sell my goods'

'Oh! It's a great mishap sir'

"What?"

That we didn't know. If only they had put M
Vincent Hugo on the receipt—I meant in full'

'Well,'

Well then I should not have supposed that this rum belonged to M. Victor Hugo the poet. You can quite understand I am. To M. V. Hugo in Paris and, of course I read it is VICTOR Hugo. And as there is not and cannot be in Paris in France in Europe in the universe but one Victor Hugo I advised him of the arrival of his rum and "

He fetches it from the warehouse?

No sir not ill! As yet he has only cleared three barrels about a thousand quarts.'

Well I am very sorry for you sir, but if you have delivered goods to M. Victor Hugo which do not belong to him it's not he but your firm which is responsible and it is your firm that I shall ask to make good its error. I have the honour to wish you good morning. The business is no longer in my hands it is in the hands of my solicitor.

M. Vincent Hugo went off leaving the headclerk in a state of stupor and despair. And the best of it was that passing suddenly from admiration to contempt he loudly began to accuse the poet of being the sole cause of all the trouble.

'Would any one believe it?' he shouted. 'Could

any one believe it of Victor Hugo? The rum does not belong to him, and yet he coolly takes it?"

"He takes it, because you wrote to him to tell him to take it," said my son

"I wrote to him! I wrote to him! But he must know that he was not expecting four thousand five hundred quarts of rum from Martinique—and consequently he had no right to receive them"

"And why not? One often receives things which one does not expect. It's obvious that Victor Hugo thought this was a present."

"A present of twelve barrels! Is it not likely?"

"At any rate this present had its charges. Victor Hugo has paid the duty on the three barrels which he has cleared."

"The duty, a hundred francs on each barrel. That's a fine lot. And I just ask you what has he been able to do with a thousand quarts of rum in six months? He can't have drunk a thousand quarts of rum in six months, I'll be hanged if he can!"

"Oh, as to that I can say nothing."

"But he'll have to say it, he will. He'll be forced to say it. And you'll see that he will be sentenced by the Courts to return the goods of which he illegally took possession, or to pay their value."

"Oh, I think you are making a mistake there."

He was making a mistake, as it turned out. The action which M. Vincent Hugo had threatened, was brought against the office and was tried in the Commercial Court. Victor Hugo having estab-

lished his absolute bona fides by stating that he had taken this quantity of rum to be one of the more or less magnificent presents, which were sent him every day from all parts of the world by admirers of his genius, was discharged from the case and the Company of the *Entrepôt des Marais* is sole defendant was condemned to pay M. Vincent Hugo the value of the three barrels which had been wrongly delivered.

'Well after all said the head-clerk who had been severely rapped over the fingers by the board after this judgment had been delivered What I should like to know is what this fellow Victor Hugo can have done with a thousand or eleven hundred quarts of rum in six months'

He stated it in court He swopped it with his wine merchant for claret and burgundy

Swopped it, did he? But he's no poet at all this poet he's a dealer in grocer A man sends him a present—at least he thinks it's one—and he swaps it

And shaking with vexation like a fox who has left his tail behind in a trap the quill driver concluded

All the same you won't find me again running after great men—fancying them in everything It's too expensive

To return to Romainville my Abbotsford number 2 which was very sad and very empty for my children and myself, after the death of their mother

my wife During the summer of 1843 we received nobody there

But all grief is assuaged And it is one of God's kindly dispensations, that our most poignant regrets transform themselves into a memory whose very bitterness is not without sweetness Joy returned in 1844, together with the sun In 1845, I bought a part of the wood which lay opposite my villa, on the castle side Two acres And it was not only with a view of extending my estate, that I decided on this purchase The Romainville wood was decreasing year by year, parcelled out into building lots, and seemed likely soon to be wiped out altogether, and I was anxious to preserve a piece of it at least for myself I walked in my wood, and then, as walking there one evening, Benjamin Antier said to me

"All that's now wanting in your domain, Marquis of Carabas, is a theatre"

"It will soon be lacking no more," said I A month later, my theatre had been built in the middle of the wood It was a theatre the like of which is rarely seen Yet like any other theatre, it had a stage, wings, footlights, and scenery But it was in the part for the audience that it differed from ordinary theatres The part for the audience was a clearing in the wood The public seated itself on the green sward, under the trees, the ladies alone had a right to chairs My children and my friends were the actors, I was the orchestra I

played the violin for dramas the piano for comedies and vaudevilles

There was a play three or four times in the season at Romainville. We played *La Forêt perilleuse* and *Rodéric et Cunegonde* in an amazing manner I dare to say it. In *La Forêt perilleuse* notably, Grassot had a large success in the part of a postman improvised by himself bringing a letter into the cave to the ferocious brigand chief. We played *Istelle ou le Père et la Fille* from the Gymnase in a way which I would certainly defy the actors of the Gymnase to imitate. They may take this statement which way they like. We played operettas *opérettes* which would have made the Bouffes Parisiens and the Variétés water in the mouth. And we had singers too to sing in our operettas. Leon Achard (let him not deny it) Leon Achard one of the first tenors of the present day made his debuts at the theatre of Romainville.

All the people of the village seated on the walls which enclosed my wood watched these really extraordinary performances with eager astonishment. Why if I had wanted to sell tickets for seats to the rich people in the district, I could often have taken splendid sums. In 1834 an Englishman wrote to me and offered me £ 8 for a box. I answered that I could not reserve him a box for there was none but that if he knew how to climb there was the stout branch of a chestnut tree at his disposal.

After the play there was a dance in the drawing

room, or on the lawn in the garden when the weather was too hot. Then, as day was breaking, there was supper, or—seeing the hour—breakfast, in the arbour. The ladies sat down to table first, and were waited on by the gentlemen, and then the gentlemen, who also were often waited on by the ladies. We laughed at the play, we laughed during the ball, and we laughed at supper, and we went on laughing after the supper, and often fell to dancing again and kept it up till noon, when we separated, still laughing at the hope of meeting again for a similar jollification, as soon as possible.

Would you like me to give the names of the people who used to be *habitués* at my house in Romainville, during a period of fifteen years?

They were.

Henry Monnier, Hippolyte Cogniard, Benjamin Antier, Barrière, Charles Desnoyers, Meyer, at that time manager of the Gaîté theatre, Mourier, manager of the Folies-Dramatiques, Villeneuve, the vaudevillist, Siraudin, Varin, Boyer, Metzmacher and Nargeot, the engravers, Fontaine, from the Sèvres' porcelain factory, Court, Barrias, Régnier, Eustache Lorsay, Worms, Belin, Devoir, the scene-painter, who painted the scenery for my theatre, Mène, the sculptor, Guennepin, the architect, Cazelles, deputy of the Hérault department, Count de Rougrave, Captain de Bernard de Seignurens, Doctor Benoit, Charleu, Hippolyte Souverain, Alexandre Cadot, Sartorius, Hervé, the musician,

Achard senior and Leon Achard Sainville Ravel
 Alcide Tousez, Grassot Lheritier Laferriere fat
 Laurent Vollet and Joucault.

Joucault was nothing but a *rentier*, but a *rentier*
 who had the glory of being a friend of Rossini's
 It was he who procured me the honour of a visit
 from the illustrious *maestro* a visit which you may
 be sure I was very glad to return Rossini wanted
 to see Paul de Koch, Paul de Koch wanted to see
 Rossini they met twice at each other's houses
 and each time embraced each other most heartily

Charles Monselet the witty writer has often
 sat down to my table at my Abbotsford but he
 has never seen it in the splendour of its amusing
fêtes, and had he wished to do so it would have
 been impossible for alas! there are no more *fêtes*
 at my house now a days

It is not my fault. It's the fault of old age of ill
 ness My character has not changed I should be
 just as happy now as I was formerly to see happy
 faces around me, but but I'm seventy six years
 old I might almost say the seventy seven for my
 birthday is close at hand and I have got the
 gout At seventy seven with the gout, Roger
 Bontemps himself would have given up spending
 his nights in drinking dancing playing eating and
 laughing

Well well if old age has forced me to be steady
 I remember that it was not always so, and that is
 in itself a pleasure

Death of Charles Paul de Kock

A NOTE BY HIS SON

HENRY DE KOCK

Death prevented my illustrious and revered father from finishing his Memoirs

He began the volume which is before us, as he has told us, in 1869, and worked at it from time to time, at his leisure, till the summer of 1870

The political events which then took place, upset him, and whom did they not upset in France, during that fatal period? What French writer would have had the courage to work, at a time when the fatherland, having madly entered upon a terrible struggle, seemed, day by day, nearer to its final downfall?

During the siege, a private sorrow was added to the anxiety which my father felt for the destinies of France. He heard that his place at Romainville had, so to speak, ceased to exist. The wood, cut down in part for fuel by the troops, had been afterwards levelled by a gang of miserable marauders

and thieves and the house had been pillaged and sacked

We know what took place after the war with the Prussians was finished A new war broke out more terrible than the first A fratricidal war A war of Frenchmen against Frenchmen

During the two months in which the execrable Commune lasted my father never once left his apartment I used often to go and see him He used to spend his days seated in his armchair near his window motionless silent and sad He sad! That showed how much he was suffering.

When fighting began in the street my sister begged him in vain to seek refuge with her in some safer part of the town.

"Where do you want to go?" he answered
"People are being killed everywhere"

The Porte Saint Martin theatre was in flames a few paces off Turning a deaf ear to all entreaties he stretched himself out on his bed which was in a room lighted up by the glare of the fire without and said I may as well die here

But he did not die yet The bullets and the flames spared him but he could not long resist the strength of such emotions such sorrows

The month of June passed by Order appeared to be re established He wished to go to Romillyville

Don't go this year,' said I

Why not?"

Because you are not strong enough to stand the

sight of your disasters”

“I am a philosopher, as you know”

“And besides, there are Prussians still at Romainville”

“Well, aren’t the Prussians worth more than these bandits of the Commune?”

He went I cried when I saw our poor little wood levelled to the ground

“Bah,” said he with a pitous smile “That’ll all grow again”

He brought furniture to his house, to replace the furniture that had been stolen—and it had all been stolen, he set workmen to repair the doors and the casements which had been burnt, and gardeners to plant trees and flowers in the garden And carpenters, locksmiths, house-painters, masons and gardeners, he urged them on all day long to make haste over their work, as though he felt sure that he would see it finished

Indeed, towards the middle of August, his strength visibly gave way It was long since he had lost his appetite and could not sleep at nights He would not hear of a doctor He did not like doctors Soon his state got so bad, that my sister insisted on his return to Paris As soon as I heard of this, I hastened to his bedside He recognized me, for he pressed my hand, but he was unable to speak to me I had brought with me Doctor Gueneau de Mussy, one of the princes of science I shall never forget the pathetic accent with which the

celebrated physician said to me having drawn me aside Oh, sir, you are to be very unhappy But nothing can be done nothing can be done Your father is dying'

He died on Tuesday August 29th 1871 at ten o'clock in the evening Fifty years before day for day he had slept for the first time in this apartment in this very room in which he breathed his last

My father as you have read belonged to the Reformed Church but he had brought my sister and myself up as Catholics thinking it more seemly that his children should belong to the church which predominates in France

At my request a pastor came to pray over the body of my illustrious and revered father and accompanied his mortal remains to the cemetery

And on this occasion a religious newspaper *L'Univers*—joked Yes joked! At a time when the whole press of all shades of opinion was unanimous in expressions of regret a writer in *L'Univers* who it is true had not the courage to sign an article which was as stupid as it was infamous had the audacity to say

One would like to know what a minister of the pure Gospel can have found to say about Paul de Kock

That is stupid anonymous sir because you who make a trade of religion you ought to have known that a Protestant pastor standing over a tomb does not speak of the body which it contains but

of God, of God, just and good, to whom, those who remain behind must go for comfort in their affliction

It is infamous, because nothing either in the life or in the work of my illustrious and revered father warranted you in doubting that good could be said of him in the tomb His good may be resumed as follows

"He was the most honest of men"

"He was the best of fathers"

"He was one of the most fertile, most charming of contemporary novelists, one of those, also, whose name will never die"

Paul de Kock is buried in the cemetery of Les Lilas, which was formerly the Romainville wood Both my sisters and I wished our dear father to rest in the land which was so dear to him The Commune of Les Lilas insisted, as an honour, in taking upon itself the maintenance for ever of Paul de Kock's tomb, and we accepted this offer with gratitude, as a last and touching homage paid by the people to the people's great writer

HENRY DE KOCK

THE END

